

**B U L L E T I N**

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES  
ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

---

**SÉRIE:**  
**RECHERCHES SUR LES DÉFORMATIONS**

---

Volume LXIII, no. 3



# B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES  
ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

---

**SÉRIE:**  
**RECHERCHES SUR LES DÉFORMATIONS**

---

Volume LXIII, no. 3

Rédacteur en chef et de la Série: JULIAN ŁAWRYNOWICZ

Comité de Rédaction de la Série

P. DOLBEAULT (Paris), O. MARTIO (Helsinki), W. A. RODRIGUES, Jr. (Campinas, SP),  
B. SENDOV (Sofia), C. SURRY (Font Romeu), O. SUZUKI (Tokyo),  
E. VESENTINI (Torino), L. WOJTCZAK (Łódź), Ilona ZASADA (Łódź), Yu. ZELINSKIĬ (Kyiv)

Secrétaire de la Série:  
JERZY RUTKOWSKI



ŁÓDŹ 2013

LÓDZKIE TOWARZYSTWO NAUKOWE  
PL-90-505 Łódź, ul. M. Curie-Skłodowskiej 11  
tel. (42) 66-55-459, fax (42) 66 55 464  
sprzedaż wydawnictw: tel. (42) 66 55 448, <http://sklep.ltn.lodz.pl>  
e-mail: [biuro@ltn.lodz.pl](mailto:biuro@ltn.lodz.pl); <http://www.ltn.lodz.pl/>

REDAKCJA NACZELNA WYDAWNICTW  
LÓDZKIEGO TOWARZYSTWA NAUKOWEGO  
Krystyna Czyżewska, A. Sławomir Gala,  
Wanda M. Krajewska (redaktor naczelny), Edward Karasiński, Jan Szymczak

**Wydano z pomocą finansową Ministerstwa Nauki  
i Szkolnictwa Wyższego**

© Copyright by Łódzkie Towarzystwo Naukowe, 2013

PL ISSN 0459-6854

Wydanie 1.  
Nakład 200 egz.  
Skład komputerowy: Zofia Fijarczyk  
Druk i oprawa: Drukarnia Wojskowa  
Łódź, ul. Gdańska 130  
tel. +48 42 6366171

The journal appears in the bases *Copernicus* and *EBSCOhost*

## INSTRUCTION AUX AUTEURS

1. La présente Série du Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź comprend des communications du domaine des mathématiques, de la physique ainsi que de leurs applications liées aux déformations au sens large.
2. Toute communications est présentée à la séance d'une Commission de la Société par un des members (avec deux opinions de spécialistes designés par la Rédaction). Elle doit lui être adressée directement par l'auteur.
3. L'article doit être écrit en anglais, français, allemand ou russe et débuté par un résumé en anglais ou en langue de la communication présentée. Dans tous les travaux écrits par des auteurs étrangers le titre et le résumé en polonais seront préparés par la rédaction. Il faut fournir le texte original qui ne peut contenir plus de 15 pages (plus 2 copies).
4. Comme des articles seront reproduits par un procédé photographique, les auteurs sont priés de les préparer avec soin. Le texte tapé sur un ordinateur de la classe IBM PC avec l'utilisation d'un imprimante de laser, est absolument indispensable. Il doit être tapé préférentiellement en *AMS-TEX* ou, exceptionnellement, en *Plain-TEX* ou *LATEX*. Après l'acceptation de texte les auteurs sont priés d'envoyer les disquettes (PC). Quelle que soient les dimensions des feuilles de papier utilisées, le texte ne doit pas dépasser un cadre de frappe de 12.3×18.7 cm (0.9 cm pour la page courante y compris). Les deux marges doivent être le la même largeur.
5. Le nom de l'auteur (avec de prénom complet), écrit en italique sera placé à la 1ère page, 5.6 cm au dessous du bord supérieur du cadre de frappe; le titre de l'acticle, en majuscules d'orateur 14 points, 7.1 cm au dessous de même bord.
6. Le texte doit être tapé avec les caractères Times 10 points typographiques et l'interligne de 14 points hors de formules longues. Les résumés, les renvois, la bibliographie et l'adresse de l'auteurs doivent être tapés avec le petites caractères 8 points typographiques et l'interligne de 12 points. Ne laissez pas de "blancs" inutiles pour respecter la densité du texte. En commençant le texte ou une formule par l'alinéa il faut taper 6 mm ou 2 cm de la marge gauche, respectivement.
7. Les texte des thèorèmes, propositions, lemmes et corollaries doivent être écrits en italique.
8. Les articles cités seront rangés dans l'ordre alphabétique et précédés de leurs numéros placés entre crochets. Après les références, l'auteur indiquera son adress complète.
9. Envoi par la poste: protégez le manuscrit à l'aide de cartons.
10. Les auteurs recevront une copie de fascicule correspondant à titre gratuit.

Adresse de la Rédaction de la Série:  
Département de la Physique d'état solide  
de l'Université de Łódź  
Pomorska 149/153, PL-90-236 Łódź, Pologne

*Name and surname of the authors*

## **TITLE – INSTRUCTION FOR AUTHORS SUBMITTING THE PAPERS FOR BULLETIN**

### **Summary**

Abstract should be written in clear and concise way, and should present all the main points of the paper. In particular, new results obtained, new approaches or methods applied, scientific significance of the paper and conclusions should be emphasized.

### **1. General information**

The paper for BULLETIN DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ should be written in LaTeX, preferably in LaTeX 2e, using the style (the file **bull.cls**).

### **2. How to prepare a manuscript**

To prepare the LaTeX 2e source file of your paper, copy the template file **instr.tex** with **Fig1.eps**, give the title of the paper, the authors with their affiliations/addresses, and go on with the body of the paper using all other means and commands of the standard class/style ‘bull.cls’.

#### **2.1. Example of a figure**

Figures (including graphs and images) should be carefully prepared and submitted in electronic form (as separate files) in Encapsulated PostScript (EPS) format.

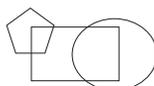


Fig. 1: The figure caption is located below the figure itself; it is automatically centered and should be typeset in small letters.

#### **2.2. Example of a table**

Tab. 1: The table caption is located above the table itself; it is automatically centered and should be typeset in small letters.

Description 1	Description 2	Description 3	Description 4
Row 1, Col 1	Row 1, Col 2	Row 1, Col 3	Row 1, Col 4
Row 2, Col 1	Row 2, Col 2	Row 2, Col 3	Row 2, Col 4

### 2.3. “Ghostwriting” and “guest authorship” are strictly forbidden

The printed version of an article is primary (comparing with the electronic version). Each contribution submitted is sent for evaluation to two independent referees before publishing.

### 3. How to submit a manuscript

Manuscripts have to be submitted in electronic form, preferably via e-mail as attachment files sent to the address **zofja@uni.lodz.pl**. If a whole manuscript exceeds 2 MB composed of more than one file, all parts of the manuscript, i.e. the text (including equations, tables, acknowledgements and references) and figures, should be ZIP-compressed to one file prior to transfer. If authors are unable to send their manuscript electronically, it should be provided on a disk (DOS format floppy or CD-ROM), containing the text and all electronic figures, and may be sent by regular mail to the address: **Department of Solid State Physics, University of Lodz, Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź, Pomorska 149/153, 90-236 Łódź, Poland.**

#### References

[1]

Affiliation/Address

## TABLE DES MATIÈRES

1. <b>Z. Jakubowski</b> , Some remarks on the origin of complex analysis in Łódź .....	11–20
2. <b>L. Wojtczak</b> and <b>Š. Zajac</b> , On the Valenta model and its actuality II .....	21–32
3. <b>J. Ławrynowicz</b> , <b>K. Nôno</b> , <b>D. Nagayama</b> and <b>O. Suzuki</b> , Binary and ternary Clifford analysis on nonion algebra and $su(3)$ .....	33–48
4. <b>B. Kowalczyk</b> and <b>A. Lecko</b> , Polynomial close-to-convex functions I. Preliminaries and the univalence problem .....	49–62
5. <b>B. Kowalczyk</b> and <b>A. Lecko</b> , Polynomial close-to-convex functions II. Inclusion relation and coefficient formulae .....	63–75
6. <b>L. N. Apostolova</b> , Square roots of bicomplex number .....	77–86
7. <b>M. I. Mitreva</b> , On the inversion theorem of Wei-Liang Chow .	87–90
8. <b>G. Ivanova</b> , Remarks on some modification of the Darboux property .....	91–100
9. <b>S. Bednarek</b> , Basic optical illusions caused by motion .....	101–107
10. <b>R. Brzozowski</b> , <b>E. Z. Frątczak</b> , <b>M. Antoszevska-Moneta</b> , <b>T. Gwizdała</b> , <b>B. Pawłowski</b> , <b>J. Balcerski</b> , and <b>M. Moneta</b> , Phase transformations of VP 800 surface by impact of slow heavy ions analysed with CEMS .....	109–116

**Professor  
Claude Surry**  
**\* 2.12.1945 † 19.12.2013**



Photo by Prof. Z.-D. Zhang

Chers amis Yolande, Frédéric et Gildas Surry,

C'est avec une immense tristesse que nous venons d'apprendre le décès de notre cher collègue et ami, Professeur Claude Surry. Il était non seulement un chercheur impliqué et professionnel, mais essentiellement, nous nous souvenons de lui en tant qu'un vrai ami – gentil, cordial, avec la riche personnalité pleine d'empathie.

Nous allons manquer de ses conseils amicaux, et de son sens de l'humour qui a toujours enrichi nos discussions autour d'une tasse de café ou d'un verre du vin.

Nous prions pour Claude et pour vous.

Nous espérons que vous recevrez la consolation chrétienne dans votre douleur et perte.

Dear Friends Yolande, Frederic and Gildas Surry,

It is with great pain and sorrow that we received your information about the death of our friend and colleague Professor Claude Surry.

He was not only an involved and highly professional researcher but, first of all, we remember Claude as a true friend – kind, warm and of rich and empathic personality.

We will miss his friendly advice and his rich sense of humour, always enriching our informal talks over a cup of coffee or a glass of wine.

We pray for Claude and for you.

We hope that you will receive Christian consolidation in your pain and loss.



## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 11–20

*Dedicated to the memory of our Professors  
on the occasion of the 60th anniversary  
of appearance of their fundamental publications*

*Zbigniew Jerzy Jakubowski***SOME REMARKS ON THE ORIGINS OF COMPLEX ANALYSIS  
IN ŁÓDŹ****Summary**

The article has a review and recollective character. Its guiding idea is a 60th anniversary of appearance of the work by Z. Charzyński entitled “Sur les fonctions univalentes bornées”.

*Keywords and phrases:* complex analysis in Łódź, bounded univalent functions, Charzyński Z., Janowski W.

Professor Julian Ławrynowicz on June 18th, 2013, at the session of Mathematical Commission of the III Department of the Łódź Society of Mathematics, proposed a project to commemorate a 60th anniversary of Scientific School of Complex Analysis in Łódź, which was initiated by a fundamental Zygmunt Charzyński’s work entitled “Sur les fonctions univalentes bornées”, [1]. The project was accepted. It remained to set about to its realization. Obviously, three restrictions must have been taken into consideration: mathematicians researching in the field of complex analysis (which used to be called as analytic functions), a time of the formation of scientific institutions before and after the Second World War, the place Łódź. The mentioned criteria are not actually “sharp”. For example, a given paper can concern couple branches of mathematics, can be written in the time when the author was working in Warsaw, and was published in the “Łódź time”, has couple co-authors, or non-local author published a paper in a publisher in Łódź, etc. From the above remarks there arise an author’s request of the present paper for understanding.

As it is well known, (e.g., [2]), in the time before the Second World War in Łódź there were running some institutions with educational and scientific character (including the department of Wolna Wszechnica Polska in Łódź). However, it is difficult to find among them significant scientific mathematical research, especially in the field of analytic functions. After the war, many mathematicians came to Łódź, where some of them for several years, only travelled to Łódź, a large group, however, remained permanently and of course the latter had a significant impact on the emergence and development of mathematics in Łódź. Among them, one should look for the pioneers of complex analysis.

Among the non-resident people it is worthy to mention Jerzy Poprużenko, who worked in Łódź in years 1946–1952 and among his earlier works there are two: “Sur l’analyticité des ensembles (A)”, 1932, [3] and “Le principe de Dirichlet et les ensembles (A)”, 1934, [4] concerning the theory of analytic functions. For couple years (1945–1954) dr. Hanna Szmuszkowicz worked in Educational College (Państwowa Wyższa Szkoła Pedagogiczna) and in University of Łódź (UŁ). In the sectional article by Z. Charzyński and L. Kaczmarek [5] there are mentioned her three papers [6, 7] and [8] written together with S. Mazurkiewicz and her two own [9, 10] concerning the theory of analytic functions, also published in the thirties. I also found the information that H. Szmuszkowicz gave lectures in UŁ on analytic functions. One of the mentioned work is entitled: “Sur les zéros des fonctions quasi-analytiques” (B), [8]. There was not found any information that J. Poprużenko and H. Szmuszkowicz had influenced the development of analytic functions in Łódź, however the above mentioned facts are worthy to be recalled.

It is known (e.g., [2]) that a great significance on the development of mathematics in Technical University of Łódź had (despite the short stay) Professor Witold Pogorzelski. Among his doctoral students there were W. Krysicki (1950) and D. Sadowska (1956). In the literature there is relatively little of attention to the activity of W. Pogorzelski in the field of analytic functions. In the article by M. Biernacki and F. Leja (Biography of Mathematics in the ten year period of 1944–1954), Part VI. Analytic functions, [11]) there were mentioned four of his works. In volume XX.3 of *Annales Polonici Mathematici*, 1967–68, p. 352, among the mentioned twenty articles by W. Pogorzelski one can find references 17 and 19 [12, 13] concerning the classical theory of analytic functions.

It seems interesting that a resident of Łódź and professors’s student, above-mentioned Danuta Sadowska, has an article entitled: “Sur une probléme aux limites de la théorie des fonctions analytiques”, 1960, [14]. W. Pogorzelski in 1954 at the conference in Łódź devoted to the theory of analytic functions [2], gave a talk on “Analytic functions and integral equations”. He is also an author of “Mathematical analysis”, which eighth part is devoted to “Functions with complex variable”. (Warszawa, PWN, 1956, volume IV). It is also worth to pay attention on the article by J. Wolska-Bochenek on the occasion of 45th anniversary of scientific work of Professor Pogorzelski, [15].

Looking for the oldest traces of complex analysis in Łódź, one must not omit Zygmunt Zahorski. Z. Charzyński and L. Kaczmarek [5] listed five of his works, including: “On a problem of M. F. Leja”, 1947 and “On zeros of quasi-analytic (B) functions”, 1947 [16, 17]. In the aforementioned article [11] M. Biernacki and F. Leja write:

1) “The Leja’s theory was completed in many details by Z. Zahorski”.

2) “In a completely different approach Z. Zahorski dealt with singularities in his works on the borderland of analytic functions and real functions”. In the sectional article by Z. Charzyński [18] there are also given the information about the Z. Zahorski’s research in the complex domain. On the aforementioned conference (year 1954) Z. Zahorski gave a talk entitled “The application of resultanta to a certain extreme issue”. We do not have the content of the paper, but the subject is close to the extreme issues of geometric function theory. More information about the Professor can be found in the J. S. Lipiński’s article [19].

In the second half of the forties, Zygmunt Charzyński, Witold Janowski and also Romuald Zawadzki appear in Łódź (from Warsaw, Łowicz and Suwałki respectively). They are “rich” in experience after didactic and organisational practice and the first two are after work in higher education in Warsaw (until 1939). In Łódź at school Lucjan Siewierski worked (as it later turned out, he was a wonderful teacher). It turns out that all four had known each other from mathematical studies in the University of Warsaw. W. Janowski together with R. Zawadzki were in oflag in Woldenburg, where they organized the secret teaching of different branches of mathematics. Among the belongings that W. Janowski took after the liberation in 1945, there were his notes from the classes and the exams. This notes were useful later for a number of former officers. As one can observe, the “spark” was needed in order to form a positive activity. For example – a scientific one.

Z. Charzyński such a “spark” brought from Warsaw. In 1938 he started his work as a Professor W. Sierpiński’s assistant in University of Warsaw. In the spring of 1939, he passed his master’s examination. During the war, in addition to working as a clerk [20], he started the investigations concerning properties of holomorphic bounded and univalent functions. I do not remember if he explained why this issue was interesting for him, and possible to realize. He created his own variational method for the aforementioned functions, and in consequence, he obtained the differential-functional equation for the extreme functions with respect to the functionals dependent on the finite number of coefficients of the expansions in Taylor’s series of such functions in the unit disk. He presented these results on Mathematical Congress in Wrocław (December 12–14, 1946), and the abstract of the article appeared in 1948, [21], whereas the full text of the work was published in the known series of *Disertationes Mathematicae (Rozprawy Matematyczne)*, 1953, [1], therefore sixty years ago. This work played a crucial and inspiring role in the process of forming a strong group of mathematicians interested in the geometric theory of analytic functions and other problems of this theory.

In 1950, Z. Charzyński and W. Janowski (using the Z. Charzyński's variational method) transfer the Charzyński's result to the case of the functionals defined on the mentioned class of  $S(M)$  functions of the form  $f(z) = z + A_2 z^2 + \dots$  holomorphic univalent and bounded ( $|f(z)| < M$  for  $|z| < 1$ ;  $M > 1$ ) dependent on the infinite number of coefficients, [22]. W. Janowski investigated a functional  $\mathcal{F}(f) = \arg f(z)/z$ ,  $f \in S(M)$  and using the primary theorem from the mentioned work [1] obtained the limits of the aforementioned functional for every  $M > 1$  and arbitrarily fixed  $z$ ,  $0 < |z| < 1$ , [23]. There are two co-authored articles from 1959 by Z. Charzyński and W. Janowski in the domain of values of coefficients  $A_2$  and  $A_3$  in the class  $S(M)$  [24] and in the domain of values of functions in this class [25]. On their basis there are mentioned earlier the general results from the articles [1] and [22]. It is also worthy to mention the elaborated by W. Janowski method of solving the differential-functional equations in the paper [26] about the estimation of the functional  $|f'(z)|$ ,  $f \in S(M)$ . Z. Charzyński believed that the presented here investigations were pioneer for these type of concrete issues.

It is worth noting that the mentioned general Z. Charzyński's and Z. Charzyński-W. Janowski's theorems were transferred to the case of subclass  $S_r(M) \subset S(M)$  of the functions with all coefficients real. This was made by I. Dziubiński [27] and Z. Charzyński-H. Śmiałkówna [28]. Obviously, the Z. Charzyński's idea of variation had to be modified to the case of symmetric functions.

The mentioned four papers about the equations of "Charzyński type" had a lot of other applications, including the doctoral and habilitation thesis. One can list here the Charzyński-Tammi's hypothesis and its beautiful solution in L. Siewierski's work, 1960, [29]. The other was an interesting hypothesis antipodal to the previous, where there was a case of  $M$  sufficiently large and the coefficients with even indexes, [30]. L. Mikołajczyk determined the domain of values of coefficients  $A_2$  and  $A_3$  in the class of holomorphic bounded and univalent functions with all coefficients real, [31]. Z. Jakubowski investigated the different problems concerning the functional  $|A_3 - \alpha A_2^2|$ ,  $\alpha \in \mathbb{R}$ , [32]. The above problem was inspired by the master's seminars, which in 1954–1955 were run by Z. Charzyński and W. Janowski (including the G. M. Gołuzin variational method), the Z. Charzyński's monographic lecture (the Löwner's method and its applications), and also the seminar for the (W. Janowski's) research workers, when as a master I had a talk about the paper [33] on the estimation of the coefficient  $A_3$  in the class  $S(M)$ . In the latter work, as in many others, there was used again the Zygmunt Charzyński's theorem, [1].

In the discussed topic the famous Bieberbach conjecture is very important. In 1955 P. R. Garabedian and M. Schiffer, [34] determined the result in a case of coefficient  $A_4$ . However, the paper was very long (38 pages) and difficult to read. I remember when professor Charzyński talking about it, questioned whether the article is easy to be checked. During his stay in the United States, Z. Charzyński together with M. Schiffer published in 1960 two papers containing new proofs, the article [35] consists of five pages and can be presented during a master's seminar. These works

have been accepted with universal acclaim and attracted renewed interest of the mentioned hypothesis in many centres around the world.

It is difficult in a short article to discuss all the research directions in the theory of complex analysis initiated by professor Charzyński, and also by professor Janowski and his students. For example one can list a paper [36] about the univalent algebraic and bounded functions – 1955 and its development in publications: [37] by L. Siewierski, [38], [39] co-authored with Janina Śladkowska, [40] by Romuald Zawadzki and in the Józef Janikowski's manuscript (about a uniformity of certain class of algebraic functions of third degree by a method with differential equations). Leon Mikołajczyk investigated for example the functions meromorphic univalent and bounded from below, [41], Izydor Dziubiński – the quasi-starlike functions, [42]. Obviously, a list of the doctoral dissertations is very long.

I hope that further recollective articles let us with satisfaction to recall the past sixty years of complex analysis in Łódź. It is also probably worth looking in the sectional articles, which were already published [20, 43–51], and one can think how much we owe our teachers. Obviously, a great significance for a development of complex analysis in Łódź had:

- 1) co-operated next conferences every four years after the mentioned conference on analytic functions in 1954,
- 2) a wide collaboration of “our seniors” with the centres of complex analysis in Cracow (F. Leja, ...) and Lublin (M. Biernacki, ...),
- 3) international cooperation (M. Schiffer, O. Tammi and many others).

## References

- [1] Z. Charzyński, *Sur les fonctions univalentes bornées*, *Rozprawy Matematyczne*, Warszawa, Inst. Matem. PAN, 2, 1953.
- [2] Z. J. Jakubowski, *O sześćdziesięcioleciu łódzkiego ośrodka matematycznego*, *Materiały XIX Ogólnopolskiej Szkoły Historii Matematyki, Wokół Brnoullich – Zamość 6–10 czerwca 2005*, Politechnika Lubelska, 2005, 155–177.
- [3] J. Popruzenko, *Sur l'analyticité des ensembles (A)*, *Fund. Math.* **18** (1932), 17–84.
- [4] J. Popruzenko, *Le principe de Dirichlet et les ensembles (A)*, *Math. Zeitschr.* **38** (1934), 146–154.
- [5] Z. Charzyński and L. Kaczmarek, *Teoria funkcji analitycznych, Historia Nauki Polskiej, Wiek XX, Zeszyt 1*, Nauki Ścisłe, Wydawn. INH (1995), 165–185.
- [6] S. Mazurkiewicz and H. Szmuszkowicz, *Sur les suites de polynômes*, *Bull. Acad. Pol.* (1933), 131–136.
- [7] S. Mazurkiewicz and H. Szmuszkowicz, *Sur les fonctions quasi-analytiques (B)*, *Bull. Acad. Pol.* (1935), 1–3.
- [8] S. Mazurkiewicz and H. Szmuszkowicz, *Sur les zéros des fonctions quasi-analytiques (B)*, *Bull. Acad. Pol.* (1937), 1–6.
- [9] H. Szmuszkowicz, *Sur le diamètre transfini*, *Sprawozdanie z Posiedzenia Tow. Nauk. Warsz. Wyd. III* **24** (1931), 1–7.
- [10] H. Szmuszkowicz, *Sur un lemme de M. Pólya*, *Sprawozdanie z Posiedzenia Tow. Nauk. Warsz. Wyd. III* **24** (1931), 211–214.

- [11] M. Biernacki and F. Leja, *Biografia matematyki w X-leciu 1944–1954, cz. VI. Funkcje analityczne*, Wiadomości Matematyczne **II-1** (1957), 74–82.
- [12] W. Pogorzelski, *Propriétés d'une classe de fonctions holomorphes aux limites discontinues*, Ann. Polon. Math. **9** (1960), 189–200.
- [13] W. Pogorzelski, *Sur certains problèmes aux limites discontinues d'ordre supérieur dans la théorie des fonctions analytiques*, Ann. Polon. Math. **12** (1962), 1–15.
- [14] D. Sadowska, *Sur une problème aux limites de la théorie des fonctions analytiques*, Ann. Polon. Math. **VIII** (1960), 193–200.
- [15] J. Wolska-Bochenek, *O pracach Witolda Pogorzelskiego w dziedzinie równań całkowych i funkcji analitycznych*, Wiadomości Matematyczne **5** (1962), 30–31, 34–37.
- [16] Z. Zahorski, *On a problem of M. F. Leja*, Ann. Soc. Polon. Math. **20** (1947), 215–222.
- [17] Z. Zahorski, *On zeros of quasi-analytic (B) functions*, Bull. Calcutta Math. Soc. **39**, no. 4 (1947), 157–165.
- [18] Z. Charzyński, *Kierunek matematyczny Uniwersytetu Łódzkiego 1945–1973*, Materiały na sesję naukową, Łódź 1974, 1–15.
- [19] J. S. Lipiński, *Zygmunt Zahorski (1914–1998)*, Wiadomości Matematyczne **36** (2000), 73–83.
- [20] J. Chądzyński (ed.), *Profesor Zygmunt Charzyński*, Sylwetki Łódzkich Uczonych, **9**, ETN, 1993.
- [21] Z. Charzyński, *Sur les fonctions univalentes bornées*, IV Congres Polonais de Mathématique, Wrocław, Colloq. Math. **1** (1948), 168–170.
- [22] Z. Charzyński and W. Janowski, *Sur l'équation générale des fonctions extrémales dans la famille des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Ann. Univ. M. Curie-Skłodowska, Sec. A **4** (1950), 41–56.
- [23] W. Janowski, *Le maximum d'argument des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Ann. Univ. M. Curie-Skłodowska, Sec. A (1950), 57–72.
- [24] Z. Charzyński and W. Janowski, *Domaine de variation des coefficients  $A_2$  et  $A_3$  des fonctions univalentes et bornées*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź, Cl. 3 **10(4)** (1959), 1–29.
- [25] Z. Charzyński and W. Janowski, *Domaine de variation de valeurs d'une fonction univalente et bornée*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź, Cl. 3 **10(5)** (1959), 1–12.
- [26] W. Janowski, *Sur les valeurs extrémales du module de la dérivivée des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Soc. Sci. Lodz., Sec. III **53** (1958).
- [27] I. Dziubiński, *L'équation des fonctions extrémales dans la famille des fonctions univalentes symétriques et bornées*, Soc. Sci. Lodz., Sec. III **65** (1960).
- [28] Z. Charzyński and H. Śmiałkówna, *The general equation of extremal functions with respect to any differentiated functional*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **12(13)** (1961), 1–16.
- [29] L. Siewierski, *The local solution of coefficient problem for bounded schlicht functions*, Soc. Sci. Lodz., Sec. III **69** (1960).
- [30] Z. J. Jakubowski, A. Zielińska, and K. Zyskowska, *Sharp estimation of the even coefficients of bounded symmetric univalent functions*, Ann. Polon. Math. **40(2)** (1983), 193–206.
- [31] L. Mikołajczyk, *Le domaine de variable des coefficients  $A_2$  et  $A_3$  des fonctions univalentes bornées avec des coefficients réels*, Bull. Acad. Polon. Sci. **14(5)** (1966), 251–254.
- [32] Z. J. Jakubowski, *Sur le maximum de la fonctionnelle  $|A_3 - \alpha A_2^2|$ ,  $0 \leq \alpha < 1$  dans la famille de fonctions  $F_M$* , Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. de Łódź **13(1)** (1962), 1–19.

- [33] W. Janowski, *Le maximum des coefficients  $A_2$  et  $A_3$  des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Ann. Polon. Math. II. **2** (1955), 145–160.
- [34] P. R. Garabedian and M. Schiffer, *A proof of the Bieberbach conjecture for fourth coefficient*, J. Rational Mech. Anal. **4** (1955), 427–465.
- [35] Z. Charzyński and M. Schiffer, *A new proof of the Bieberbach conjecture for the fourth coefficient*, Arch. Rational. Mech. Anal. **5** (1960), 187–193.
- [36] Z. Charzyński, *Sur les fonctions univalentes algébriques bornées*, Rozprawy Matematyczne, Warszawa, Inst. PAN **10** (1955), 1–41.
- [37] L. Siewierski, *Sur les fonctions univalentes, algébriques dans le demi-plan*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **7(4)** (1956), 1–17.
- [38] Z. Charzyński and J. Śladkowska, *Algebraic functions and analytic variations of univalent functions*, Bull. Acad. Polon. Sci. **16** (1968), 793–794.
- [39] Z. Charzyński and J. Śladkowska, *Fonctions algébriques et variations analytiques des fonctions univalentes*, Rozprawy Matematyczne, Warszawa **70** (1970), 1–77.
- [40] R. Zawadzki, *Les équations des fonctions extrémales dans les familles des fonctions univalentes algébriques non bornées*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **8(1)** (1957), 1–21.
- [41] L. Mikołajczyk, *Théorème sur la déformation pour les fonctions univalentes, p-symétriques et bornées inférieurement dans le domaine  $|z| > 1$* , Bull. Acad. Polon. Sci. **14(5)** (1966), 245–250.
- [42] I. Dziubiński, *Quasi-starlike functions*, Ann. Polon. Math. **26** (1972), 175–197.
- [43] J. Śladowska-Zahorska, *Professor Z. Charzyński's contribution to the theory of mappings*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **36(21)** (1986), 1–16.
- [44] Z. J. Jakubowski, *Kilka wspomnień*, Sprawozdania z czynności i posiedzeń naukowych ŁTN **65** (2011).
- [45] J. Chądzyński and J. Ławrynowicz, *Obituary: Zygmunt Charzyński (1914–2001)*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **51** (2001), 5–14.
- [46] A. Łazińska (ed.), *Profesor Zbigniew Jerzy Jakubowski*, Sylwetki Łódzkich Uczonych, ŁTN, **79** (2005).
- [47] Z. J. Jakubowski, *Witold Janowski (1912–1972)*, Wiadomości Matematyczne **29** (1975), 43–49.
- [48] Z. J. Jakubowski, *Kilka refleksji dotyczących funkcji jednolistnych ograniczonych*, Z. N. Politechniki Rzeszowskiej, Mat. **26** (2002), 5–30.
- [49] T. Balcerzak (ed.), *Profesor Julian Ławrynowicz*, Sylwetki Łódzkich Uczonych, ŁTN, **94** (2010).
- [50] O. Tammi, *On the first postwar contacts between Polish and Finnish mathematicians*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **51** (2001), 15–20.
- [51] S. Hartman, *Osiągnięcia naukowe XX-lecia matematyki*, Wiadomości Matematyczne **VIII** (1965), 1–21.

### Supplement to the References

(The papers written in the period 1946–1963 that there were not cited in the text)

1. Z. Charzyński, *Methodes variationelles dans la théorie des fonctions univalentes*, Bull. Math. Soc. Sci. Math. Phys. R. P. Roumaine, **1** (1957), 259–264.
2. Z. Charzyński and H. Śmiałkówna, *Sur certaines conditions nécessaires et suffisantes pour que les fonctions holomorphes dans le cercle unité soient univalentes et bornées*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **8**, no. 2 (1958), 1–21.

3. Z. Charzyński, *Fonctions univalentes inverses. Polynômes univalentes*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **9**, no. 7 (1958), 1–12.
4. Z. Charzyński, *Uniformisation des fonctions. Remarque sur les courbes planes*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **9**, no. 8 (1958), 1–12.
5. Z. Charzyński and M. Schiffer, *A geometric proof of the Bieberbach conjecture for the fourth coefficient*, Scripta Math. **25**, 1960, 173–181.
6. Z. Charzyński, *Bounds for analytic functions of two complex variables*, Math. Z. **75** (1960/61), 29–35.
7. Z. Charzyński and W. Waliszewski, *Sur l'existence de solutions pour des systèmes d'équations algébriques réelles non linéaires*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **12, 14** (1961), 1–8.
8. Z. Charzyński, *Sur certaines évaluations générales d'une fonction analytique de deux variables dans le voisinage d'un zéro isolé*, Colloq. Math. **9** (1962), 115–118.
9. I. Dziubiński, *Sur le minimum du diamètre de la fonction transformant la région en cercle unité*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **11(3)** (1960), 1–3.
10. I. Dziubiński, *Equation générale de Löwner*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **11(4)** (1960), 1–8.
11. Z. J. Jakubowski, *Le maximum d'une fonctionnelle dans la famille des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Deuxième Conf. des Fonctions Analytiques, Lublin, 2–6.09.1958, Colloq. Math. **7(1)** (1959), 127–128.
12. Z. J. Jakubowski, *Sur le maximum du coefficient  $A_4$  des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Deuxième Conf. des Fonctions Analytiques, Lublin, 2–6.09.1958, Colloq. Math. **7(1)** (1959), 128–129.
13. Z. J. Jakubowski, *Wyznaczenie numeryczne maksimum modułu współczynnika  $A_3$  i argumentu funkcji jednolistnych ograniczonych*, Sci. Bulletins of the Univ. of Łódź, Ser. II **6** (1959), 175–184.
14. Z. J. Jakubowski, *O oszacowaniu współczynnika  $B_4$  w rodzinie funkcji jednolistnych ograniczonych o współczynnikach rzeczywistych*, Zeszyty Naukowe Politech. Łódzkiej **33(9)** (1961), 55–71.
15. Z. J. Jakubowski, *Théorèmes sur la déformation dans la famille de fonctions univalentes à un pôle simple à l'infini et bornées inférieurement dans le cercle  $K(\infty, 1)$* , Soc. Sci. Lodziensis, Sec. III **76** (1962), 1–40.
16. J. Janikowski, *Méthode algébrique et équations de Löwner*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **12(16)** (1961), 1–9.
17. J. Janikowski, *Équation intégrale non lin ...* (no data), 1962.
18. W. Janowski, *Le maximum des coefficients  $B_2$  et  $B_3$  des fonctions univalentes  $K$ -symétriques bornées*, Ann. Polon. Math. **2** (1955), 161–169.
19. W. Janowski, *Le maximum de la partie imaginaire des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Ann. Polon. Math. **2** (1955), 182–200.
20. W. Janowski, *Sur les fonctions univalentes  $k$ -symétriques*, Ann. Polon. Math. **2** (1955), 201–208.
21. W. Janowski, *Sur le maximum du module des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **6, 1** (1955), 1–11.
22. W. Janowski, *Sur les valeurs extrémales du module de la dérivée des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Bull. Acad. Polon. Sci. **6** (1958), 255–259.

23. W. Janowski, *Sur le borne supérieure d'une fonctionnelle dans la famille des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **13(6)** (1962), 1–10.
24. W. Janowski, *Oszacowanie modułu logarytmu ilorazu różnicowego w rodzinie funkcji holomorficzych jednolistnych i ograniczonych w kole  $K(\infty, 1)$* , Zeszyty Naukowe Uniw. Łódzkiego, Ser. II **13** (1962), 159–164.
25. J. Ławrynowicz, *Schwinger's method generalized for the arbitrary quantum numbers*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **12(3)** (1961), 1–8.
26. W. Pogorzelski, *Zagadnienie nieliniowe Hilberta-Pirwałowa*, Biul. WAT **6** (1953), 3–12.
27. W. Pogorzelski, *Problème non d'Hilbert pour le système de fonctions*, Bull. Acad. Polon. Sci. III. **2** (1954), 3–4.
28. W. Pogorzelski, *Problème aux limites d'Hilbert généralisé*, Bull. Acad. Polon. Sci. III. **2** (1954), 367–370.
29. W. Pogorzelski, *Problème aux limites d'Hilbert généralisé*, Ann. Polon. Math. **2** (1955), 136–144.
30. W. Pogorzelski, *Problème non-linéaire d'Hilbert pour le système de fonctions*, Ann. Polon. Math. **2** (1955), 1–13.
31. L. Siewierski, *Sur les variation locale des fonctions univalentes algébriques dans le demi-plan*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **8(3)** (1957), 1–15.
32. L. Siewierski, *Sur le fonctions extrémales dans les famille des fonctions univalentes algébriques dans le demi-plan*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **8(9)** (1957), 1–30.
33. J. Śladkowska, *Polynômes quasi-univalent et univalents. Variations élémentaires et polynômes extrémaux*, Soc. Sci. Lodzianis, Sec. III **64** (1960), 1–40.
34. J. Śladkowska, *Bounds of analytic functions of two complex variables in domains with the Bergman-Shilov boundary*, Paczyc J. Math. **12(4)** (1962), 1435–1451.
35. W. Waliszewski, *Sur un condition suffisamment d'existence de solution d'un système de  $n$  équations algébriques non linéaires*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **10(12)** (1959), 1–12.
36. P. Wiatrowski, *Sur le théorème de Koebe pour la classe de fonctions univalentes bornées*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **10(14)** (1959), 1–13.
37. P. Wiatrowski, *Limitation exacte du module de la dérivée logarithmique dans la famille des fonctions univalentes bornées*, Soc. Sci. Lodzianis, Sec. 3 **63** (1960), 1–60.
38. P. Wiatrowski, *Zastosowania twierdzenia Cauchy'ego i twierdzenia o residuach do obliczania całek*, Zeszyty Naukowe Politech. Łódzkiej, Chemia **9 33** (1961), 3–54.
39. Z. Zahorski, *Problèmes de la théorie des ensembles et des fonctions*, C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris **223** (1946), 449–451.
40. Z. Zahorski, *Sur l'ensemble des points singuliers d'une fonction d'une variable réelle admettant dérivatives de tous les ordres*, Fund. Math. **34** (1947), 183–245.
41. Z. Zahorski, *Suplement au mémoire "Sur l'ensemble des points singuliers d'une fonction d'une variable réelle admettant dérivatives de tous les ordres"*, Fund. Math. **36** (1949), 319–320.
42. R. Zawadzki, *Sur les fonctions univalentes algébriques*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **8(1)** (1957), 1–21.
43. R. Zawadzki, *Sur le module de la dérivée des fonctions holomorphes univalentes  $k$ -symétriques*, Zeszyty Naukowe Politech. Łódzkiej **38** (1961), 6–59.

44. R. Zawadzki, *Sur les modules des coefficients  $B_0$  et  $B_1$  des fonctions holomorphes univalentes bornées inférieurement*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **12(5)** (1961), 1–9.
45. R. Zawadzki, *Sur la fonctionnelle  $||B_1| - |B_0||$  définie dans la familles des fonction univalentes bornées inférieurement*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lett. Łódź **12(6)** (1961), 1–15.
46. Deuxième Conférence des Fonctions Analytiques, Lublin, 2–6.09.1958, Colloq. Math. **7(1)** (1959), 113–153; Wiadomości Matem. III. **2** (1959), 163–165.
47. Proceedings of the Conference, Programme, Abstracts, Kraków 30.08–4.09.1962, 1962, 1–54; Colloq. Math., XI. **2** 1964.
48. “Program zajęć konferencji poświęconej teorii funkcji analitycznych w Łodzi 21-23.X.1954 r.” Patrz np. Z. J. Jakubowski, *Ludzie matematyki Łódzkiej*, ŁTN, Łódź (2012), 26–27.

**Remark.** In the monograph by S. D. Bernardi, *Bibliography of Schlicht Functions*, Part I and II, Mariner Publishing Company, INC, Tampa, Florida, 1982, one can find several papers from the above references. Of course, we think only about the papers on univalent functions. Namely, Z. Charzyński was the author (or co-author) of 10 from the cited papers, W. Janowski – 10, R. Siewierski and R. Zawadzki – 4 per each one, I. Dziubiński, Z. J. Jakubowski, P. Wiatrowski – 2 per each one, J. Janikowski, J. Śladkowska, H. Śmiałkówna – 1 per each one. The significant number of the papers derived from the idea of Professor Z. Charzyński ([1] and [21] from References).

Department of Nonlinear Analysis  
 Faculty of Mathematics and Computer Science  
 University of Łódź  
 Stefana Banacha 22, PL-90-238 Łódź  
 Poland  
 e-mail: zjakub@math.uni.lodz.pl

Presented by Zbigniew Jerzy Jakubowski and Julian Ławrynowicz at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on December 16, 2013

## WSPOMNIENIA O POCZĄTKACH ANALIZY ZESPOLONEJ W ŁODZI

### Streszczenie

Artykuł ma charakter przeglądowy i wspomnieniowy. Ideą przewodnią jest 60-ta rocznica ukazania się pracy Z. Charzyńskiego pt. “Sur les fonctions univalentes bornées”.

## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 21–32

*In memory of  
Professor Luboš Valenta*

*Leszek Wojtczak and Štefan Zajac*

## ON THE VALENTA MODEL AND ITS ACTUALITY II

**Summary**

The model for ferromagnetic thin films originally introduced by Luboš Valenta at the level of molecular field approximation (MFA) and now modified in the case of layered nanoparticles described by means of the reactions field approach (RFA) is still of great interest for modern physics and technology.

In this context the present paper is a contribution to the previous one, devoted to the Valenta model and its actuality, I, published in *Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź; Série: Recherches sur les Déformations* (**25** (2005), 13, ŁTN, Łódź, 2005).

The recent results obtained within the modified version of the Valenta model were presented during the 15th Czech and Slovak Conference on Magnetism (Košice 2013) in poster form entitled “Topicality of the Valenta model for the magnetization in thin films and surfaces” (CSMAG’13 Abstracts, Košice, 2013, P4-01). For that reason we remember this fact in honor of P. J. Šafarik University in 50. anniversary of its foundation.

*Keywords and phrases:* ferromagnetic thin films, spin autocorrelation functions, Valenta model modified by Reaction Field Approach

**1. Introduction**

Fifty five years ago Luboš Valenta introduced the model for ferromagnetic thin films [1, 2–4, 5] which describes the spontaneous magnetization, its angular and spatial distributions leading to the construction of spin waves resonances, the calculations in terms of the order-disorder theory as well as the phase transitions including also the instability conditions.

The model was later extended to its more general form which is now known in literature as the Valenta model [1, 2–4, 6]. It is applicable not only to ferromagnetic thin films but it can also be applied to the description of the lattice thermodynamics as well as to electronic phenomena and order-disorder effects.

The Valenta model for magnetic films has been preceded by the pioneering work [2] concerning the angular distribution of magnetization in one-dimensional toroid. The work has been founded as a good starting point for explanation of the surface deformed in rare-earth thin films with heliomagnetic structure. Mössbauer effect as well as neutron inelastic magnetic scattering certify non colinear distribution of magnetization in low dimensional solid magnetic systems.

Recently, the Valenta model is also applied to the description of nanoparticles when the extended form of the model is modified by RFA where the spin correlations are not neglected, in contrast to MFA when the spin correlations do not appear.

Thus, we introduce now the Valenta model modified by RFA [7–10] in order to test the fundamental parameters like the phase transition temperature  $T_{\text{RFA}}^C(n)$  and  $T_{\text{MFA}}^C(n)$  as well as the spin waves resonance linewidth  $\Gamma_{\tau h}^{\text{RFA}}$  and  $\Gamma_{\tau h}^{\text{MFA}}$  considered for each resonance peak  $(\tau h)^*$  derived by means of a frequency spectrum which satisfies the difference equations of universal character [11, 12] for spin wave propagation (SWR) [13] or Green's function averages (GFA) [14] are related to the discussed coefficients in MFA [3] or RFA [9]. The symbol  $h$  denotes the wave vector in the plane perpendicular to the direction labelled by  $\tau$ . In particular, the last method seems to us very convenient for nano-structures.

In order to introduce the characterization by means of parameter  $K$  we interpret it as the surface anisotropy of the model assumed that the Curie temperature in MFA is given by [3]

$$(1) \quad T_{\text{MFA}}^C(n) = T_{\text{MFA}}^C(\infty) \cdot \frac{s_{11} + s_{12} \cos \frac{\pi}{n+1}}{s_{11} + 2s_{12}}$$

where

$$(2) \quad T_{\text{MFA}}^C(\infty) = \frac{zJ}{k_B}, \quad z = s_{11} + s_{12},$$

and the boundary condition ( $\alpha = \pi$ ) should be valid.

The relation (2) shows that the Curie temperature is proportional to the exchange integral  $J$  which determines the interaction between two neighbouring spins ( $s_{\nu\mu}; \nu, \mu = 1, 2$ ) denotes the number of nearest neighbours in the plane  $\mu$  when the central spin is localized in the plane  $\nu$ .

Similar calculations lead to the Curie temperature in RFA, namely [9]

$$(3) \quad T_{\text{RFA}}^C(n) = T_{\text{MFA}}^C(n) \frac{1}{1 + \frac{K}{J}} G^{-1} \left( 1 + \frac{K}{J} \right)$$

where

$$(4) \quad G(s) = \frac{1}{nN} \sum_{\tau h} \frac{1}{\left[ s - \frac{I(\tau, h)}{I(1,0)} \right]}$$

stands for the “lattice” Green function.

The aim of our presentation is to discuss the relation between MFA and RFA considerations taking into account the role of RFA in the calculations concerning the Curie temperature.

The next experimental verification concern the description of the spin waves resonances terms and the explanation of the spectral structure of excitations. The third domain of our interest in this work is the description of the topmost surface layer and its influence on the thermodynamical properties, first of all, the behaviour of the spontaneous magnetization leads to the picture of stochastic structures which decay spontaneously. These mentioned phenomena having the mutual behaviours are similar in their solutions.

The spontaneous magnetization considered in its local equilibrium can be obtained by means of the use of the MFA or RFA in their standard form of the quantum mechanics which gives

$$(5) \quad \langle S_R^z \rangle_{\text{MFA}} = \frac{1}{2} \tanh \left( \frac{J}{2k_B T} \sum_g \langle S_{R+g}^z \rangle_{\text{MFA}} \right)$$

in the case of  $S = 1/2$  in MFA, while the result in RFA is of the form [9, 18]

$$(6) \quad \langle S_R^z \rangle_{\text{RFA}} = \frac{1}{2} \tanh \left( J \sum_g \langle S_{R+g}^z \rangle + (K - \lambda) \langle S_R^z \rangle_{\text{RFA}} \right)$$

where

$$(7) \quad \lambda = Jz \left( s - \frac{1}{G^1(s)} \right)$$

for  $s = 1 + \frac{K}{J}$  with the summation over  $g$  which runs over the distance between two of neighbouring spins.  $K$  is the anisotropy parameter.

## 2. MFA and RFA

The Valenta model modified by RFA is discussed in the context of its discretization and its thermodynamics corresponding to the Valenta model which can be considered in two variants, (RFA) and (MFA).

Next, the kinetic equation is based on the Oguchi approach [1] for the damping term and the Néel [6] construction for the thermodynamics of inhomogeneous systems which are described by the equation of the diffusion type with the damping [8]. In this context the basic differential equation is calculated in MFA or RFA procedure applied to the Oguchi method.

The damping coefficient  $\Gamma_{\tau h}$  and the diffusion constant  $\Lambda_{\tau h}$  are connected by

$$(8) \quad \tau_{\tau h}^* \left( \Gamma_{\tau h} + \frac{z}{a^2} \Lambda_{\tau h} \right) = 1$$

hence, the coefficients  $\Gamma_{\tau h}$  and  $\Lambda_{\tau h}$  can be calculated separately. In advance we obtain

$$(9) \quad \Gamma_{\tau h} = \frac{1}{\tau_{\tau h}^*} \left[ 1 - \frac{1}{2} (1 - 4 \langle S_{\tau h}^z \rangle^2) \frac{T_C(\infty)}{T} \right]$$

and

$$(10) \quad \Lambda_{\tau h} = \frac{1}{\tau_{\tau h}^*} \cdot \frac{1}{2} \left[ 1 - 4 \langle S_{\tau h}^z \rangle^2 \frac{T_C(\infty)}{T} \right]$$

with  $\tau_{\tau h}^*$  standing for the linewidth parameter temperature dependent.

We can see that the damping coefficient  $\Gamma_{\tau h}$  as well as the diffusion constant  $\Lambda_{\tau h}$  depend on the spontaneous magnetization  $M_{\tau h} = g\mu_B \langle S_{\tau h}^z \rangle$ , namely

$$(11) \quad \langle S_{\tau h}^z \rangle = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\nu j} T_{\nu j \tau h} \langle S_{\nu j}^z \rangle$$

with the coefficients  $T_{\nu j \tau h}$  satisfying the well known equation [11, 12] which together with the orthogonality conditions and the boundary conditions allow us to find the solutions interpreted as the third component of the propagation wave vector connected with the perpendicular wave amplitudes which describe only the properties of the boundary surfaces.

The inhomogeneities of the magnetization  $\langle S_{\nu j}^z \rangle$  are connected with the creation  $a_{\nu j}^+$  and annihilation  $a_{\nu j}^-$  operators for magnons and they can determine the relation between the third component of magnetization and the number of magnons, namely

$$(12) \quad \langle S_{\nu j}^z \rangle = S - n_{\nu j}, \quad n_{\nu j} = a_{\nu j}^+ a_{\nu j}^-.$$

In this manner, taking into consideration, that

$$(13) \quad n_{\nu j} = \sum_{\tau h} T_{\nu j \tau h} n_{\tau h}$$

we present a scheme of mutual dependences leading to the main self consistent relations between the wave and particle quantum mechanics formulation.

First of all, the number of magnons  $n_{\tau h}$  determined with respect to peaks of the energetic spectrum  $E_{\tau h}^s$  for which, in consequence, we have

$$(14) \quad n_{\tau h} = \left( \frac{1}{e^{\beta E_{\tau h}^s} - 1} + \frac{(n+1)}{1 - e^{B(n+1)E_{\tau h}^s}} \right); \quad \beta = (k_B T)^{-1}$$

instead of that determined by the boson statistics when the second term is vanishing [cf. 17, 18].

The occupied number of quasi-particles is in fact determined by structural behavior for which the equation describing the linear transformation. The Curie temperature behavior is one of the most interesting results in connection with the construction of models presented.

The Curie point in RFA can be seen in contrast to the Curie point in MFA. That in the case of the isotropic interactions ( $K = 0$ ,  $s = 1$ ,  $\Delta J = J^z - J^* = 0$ ) the  $T_{\text{RFA}}^c$  is leading to zero ( $G^{-1}(1) = 0$ ) when it is compared with  $T_{\text{MFA}}^c$  which has the limited value. This result is in agreement with the rigorous theorems by Mermin and Wagner [12] for localized order or by Gosh in the case of band theory.

Thus, we can conclude that the Curie temperature behavior is one of the most interesting results in connection with the constructing of the model RFA in context to MFA.

The second effect observed in the case of the phase transition temperature and its behavior is the interval of spin autocorrelation function which can be considered in the conditions when the influence of the correlation symmetry is important not only for the scattering but also for the spin autocorrelation time. The recent one is evidently closer to the experimental data than to those obtained on the basis of the Ornstein-Zernike radial function.

### 3. Theory and experiments

The interplay between the theory and experiment is still important for the fundamental physics and modern technology. Moreover, recent achievements obtained in the case of local nanoparticles show that the progress of the surface physics seems to be expected.

In particular, the use of the Valenta model considered for the Curie temperature belonging to the interval from the RFA to MFA level can be treated as a new original methodology which allows us to interpret magnetic fluctuations. We introduce the Curie temperature dependence on temperature. From theoretical point of view we consider the relation between the Curie point and the anisotropy parameter. From experimental point of view analyze the phase transition in relation to the surface properties. In this manner the present paper is of an proper example of above mentioned relation which corresponds to the measurement of the autocorrelation time.

Fig. 1 presents a typical experimental device profiting from the spin wave resonances observed in the form of the peaks of the energetic spectrum  $E_{\tau h}$ ,

$$(15) \quad (n_{\tau h}) = f(E_{\tau h}),$$

where  $n_{\tau h}$  given by (14), is a number of quasi-particles which occupy the sublattices being in fact determined by structural behavior for which the determinant is defined by the linear transformation describing the transition from an arbitrary sublattice to diagonal one.  $f$  denotes the Fermi-Dirac distribution. Next, we can see that the RFA allows us to conclude that the character of the phase transition reflects the fluctuating character connected with methodology, influence of its nature on a system has the meaning of the second. Fig. 2 shows the geometry of the SWR experiment parameter describing the linewidth  $\Gamma_{\tau h}$  as related to the linewidth  $\Gamma_{\tau h}$ . In the spin waves resonance (SWR) amplitude in the dependence on the Curie temperature by means of the experimental connected with the magnetic adsorption power measurements.

The alternative magnetic field  $h^*$  causes the precession around magnetization in the plane perpendicular to the surface. The change of the field  $H_{\perp}$  leads to the change of the intensity  $P_{\tau h=0}^{0-1}$  which is determined by the matrix elements corresponding to the inelastic magnetic scattering on the surfaces. The power intensity is found originally by the resonance conditions

$$(16) \quad P_{\tau h=0}^{0-1} \sim P_0 \left[ \sum_{\nu} T_{\nu\tau} \langle S_{\nu}^z \rangle \right] \left[ \sum_{\nu} T_{\nu\tau} \right].$$

Another example to the presented here interpretations is connected with the relation between the Curie temperature and properties of a sample like the observation of elementary excitations via the adsorption power measurements (Fig. 2).

The effective parameter related to the linewidth can be observed in the spin waves resonance (SWR) experiments. The power intensity is found originally by the resonance condition related to the environment can be reduced to two relations

$$(17) \quad T_{\tau h} \sim \left| \sum_{\nu j} T_{\nu j \tau h} \right| \neq 0$$

and

$$(18) \quad T_{\tau h} \sim \left| \sum_{\nu j} T_{\nu j \tau h} \langle S_{\nu j}^z \rangle \right| \neq 0$$

which are very well known in literature. The conditions (17) and (18) are satisfied when the surface anisotropy is taken into account. At the same time it is worthwhile to notice that in the case of regular homogeneous surfaces the conditions (17) and (18) are not fulfilled, so that the ideal samples cannot consider for discussed experiments.

Therefore, magnetic phenomena expected at the surfaces, interfaces, or first of all superficial layers receive great attention. This arises from the fact that magnetic structures serve as almost ideal systems to explore basic ideas in physics [17–22]. However, for several decades the experiments and the theory were not developed at the same level of precision.

In order to consider an example of the interplay between theory and experiment we take into account ferromagnetic thin films with the hexagonal cobalt structure, we describe their properties. For this purpose we divide a cobalt sample into layers parallel to the plane  $xy(0001)$  which remains determined by spins belonging to one of the sublattices  $A$  and  $B$ . In this manner we obtain  $n$  layers of type  $A$  and  $n$  layers of type  $B$ . The layers are directed in  $z$ -axis which is perpendicular to the plane  $xy$  whose position in two-dimensional space of spins is extended. The magnetization is assumed to be along the  $z$ -axis. Its characteristics is determined by the thermodynamic average and the distribution of the spin directions at every point of the discretized lattice.

Let us remark that the lattice of hexagonal cobalt sample is characteristic for the structure of 2D graphene [24] and the analogy between two sublattices which

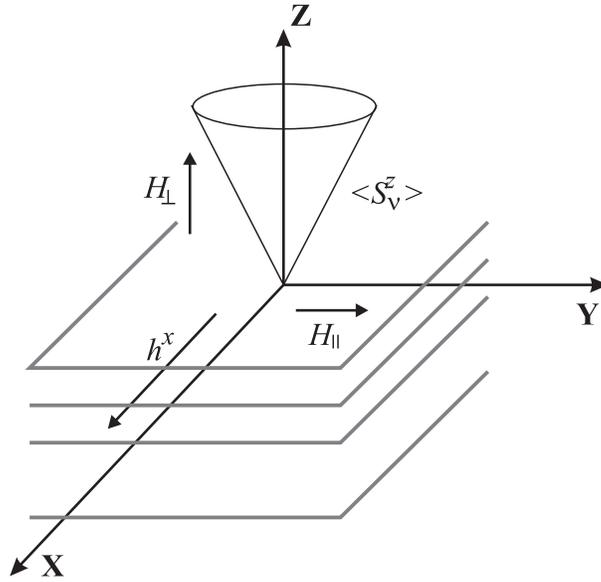


Fig. 1: The geometry of the spin waves resonance (SWR) experiment. The alternating magnetic field  $h^x$  causes the precession around magnetisation in the plane perpendicular to the surface. The intensity  $P_r$  is determined by the matrix elements given by (15).

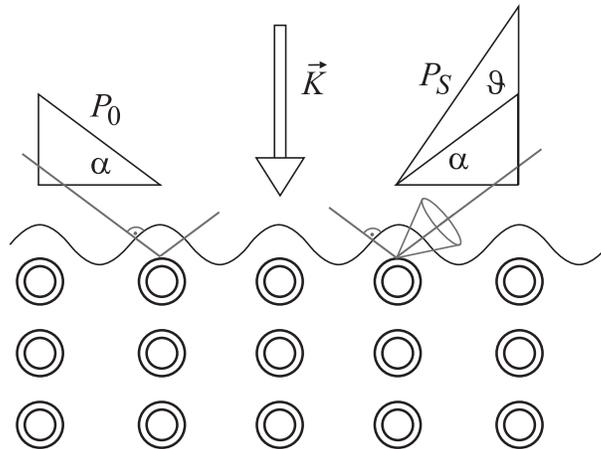


Fig. 2: Trajectories on the surfaces corresponding to the scattering phenomena which appear on the surface [cf. 15], or more precisely speaking on the atoms localized into lattice sites connected with magnons. The impulse momentum  $P_0$  and  $P_S$  as well as the production of a quasi particle satisfy the momentum and the energy conversation law. The incident and scattered particles are a source of the energy of the motion in the plane parallel to the surface [cf. 16].

are properly chosen allows us to find the structure belonging to the regular lattice. For the investigations of surface magnetic structures we use ion-induced capture or emission of the spin polarized from magnetic surfaces which are powerful means for prolong various surface properties, in particular, surface magnetic properties. In order to continue various methods, we can profit from the theoretical description of the methods choosing experimental investigations which allow us to find the methods experimentally precise with a great level of applications.

Electron capture spectrometry (ECS) and spin-polarized electron emission spectroscopy (SPEES), electron spin polarization (ESP) existing at magnetic surface with extremely high surface sensitivity.

Experimental details on ECS, SPEES and ESP are given in the papers published by C. Rau [15] ECS procedure allows us to study long-ranged and short-ranged ferromagnetic order at surfaces of magnetic materials. The physical process in ECS is the capture of one or two spin polarized electrons during grazing angle surface reflection of fast ions. In the case of deuterons with the energy 150 keV and the angle of incidence  $0.2^\circ$  the distance of closes approach to the reflecting surface amount to 0.1 mm (Fig. 3ab) and the ions probe spin polarized electron densities of state at the topmost surface layer. The long ranged ferromagnetic order is detected by exploiting one-electron capture processes ( $D^+ + e^- \rightarrow D^0$ ) [15]. The short ranged ferromagnetic order is detected by exploiting two electron capture processes ( $D^+ + 2e^- \rightarrow D^0$  or  $H^+ + 2e^- \rightarrow H^-$ ).

In angle and energy resolved SPEED, small angle surface scattering of energetic (5.150 keV) ions ( $H^+$ ,  $He^+$  or  $Ne^+$ ) is utilized to study.

It is found that at Ni(*hkl*) surfaces the short ranged ferromagnetic order exists even at  $2T_{Cs}$  where  $T_{Cs}$  means the Curie temperature the emission of spin polarized secondary and Auger electrons as a measure of long ranged ferromagnetic order which can be interpreted as the spin correlations when the measurements are made above the Curie temperature of a sample.

Fig. 2 illustrates ion trajectories for scattering angles  $\alpha$  varying this angle from  $0.2^\circ$  up to  $45^\circ$  allows to vary the probing depth from the topmost surface layer to interface and deeper layers, allowing us to perform magnetic depth profiling.

The ESP of secondary (or Auger) electrons emitted along the surface normal is detected by using Mott detectors. The EPS is defined by  $P = (n^+ - n^-)/(n^+ + n^-)$  with  $n^+$  and  $n^-$  being the numbers of majority and minority of spin electrons, respectively. The case  $P > 0$  is related to a predominance of majority spin electrons parallel to the total magnetization while the case  $P < 0$  refers to a predominance of minority spin electrons antiparallel to the total magnetization.

We can see that the new spin-sensitive spectroscopies discussed in the excellent review reported by Rau [15] (i.e. ECS, SPEES) as well as SIMPA (scanning ions microscopy with polarization analysis (SIMPA)), permit very selective investigations of surface magnetic structures and promise to reveal many new and fascinating phenomena in the future. In particular, SIMPA enables us to study and fabricate

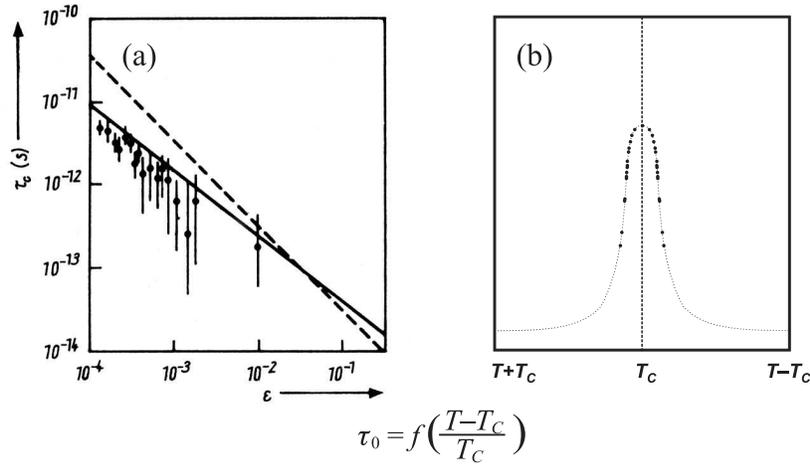


Fig. 3: Temperature dependence ( $\varepsilon = (T - T_C)/T_C$ ) of the spin autocorrelation time in a nickel sample (a). The solid curve is related to the correlation function with the lattice symmetry [21]. The dashed curve is related to the Ornstein-Zernike function. Experimental points are taken from the paper of Kobeissi et al. [23]. The temperature diffusion (b) on the linewidth as compared with experimental points.

in situ nano structured 3D, 2D and 1D magnetic elements. SIMPA allows us for detailed observations of the internal structure of magnetic domains and domain walls by providing high resolution and the surface electron spin polarization.

Fig. 3 shows that the spin auto-relation time is of stochastic nature. Transforming the picture presented in Fig. 3a to the coordinate system  $(T_C, T_0(T_C))$  presented in Fig. 3b we can see that the  $\tau_0$  is of the Gaussian-like form experimentally confirmed. The magnetization is of the same properties due to the universal theory of homogeneous functions, namely we can write

$$\tau_0^* \sim \left[ 1 - \left( \frac{T_C - T}{T_C} \right)^{2\beta} \right]^{\beta+1}.$$

The Curie temperature depend on temperature via the autocorrelation time  $\tau^*$  temperature dependent. The temperature dependence of the magnetisation is described by the critical exponent  $\beta$ .

The experiments presented in the paper of Rau [15] provide clear evidence that the described methods are powerful techniques to study a topmost surface and interface layer magnetic properties. The results collected by Rau concern the nickel, iron, hcp cobalt samples as well as several systems, magnetically exotic, like vanadium. Terbium films seem to us extremely interesting for considerations. In particular, the cobalt topmost planes are interesting because their band structure remains very similar to the planes of graphene whose properties are intensively studied [24].

## 4. Final conclusions

The main result of the present paper is to bring a comparison between the Valenta model originally applied in MFA approach and the model modified in terms of RFA, introduced to the theoretical construction, considered in the both cases; thin films as well nanoparticles structures.

The evident advantage in the case of RFA method is observed when a generalized susceptibility considerations are included to the sample energy minimization and lead to the conclusion that the convergence of a mean number of magnons is obtained even in thin films, and in contrast to the result of MFA calculations.

We consider the above problem as the explanation of the spontaneous magnetization in some isotropic layered system which gives the average magnetization vanishing at the temperature assumed to be different from zero. For this purpose, we remember that a thin film in the Valenta model is treated as a set of  $n$  monoatomic layers parallel with the film surfaces. The set of layers is equivalent in their interpretation to Néel sublattices [6] embedded in the limited space of the discrete geometry. Of course, the construction of the lattice for the structural form in the case of RFA is the same. In terms of thermodynamics we consider properties of a sample treated as the composition of layers which form homogeneous independent subsystems. Thus, the relation between the main values of spontaneous magnetization and the effective number of magnons is different when MFA or RFA are applied.

Concluding we can see that the mean number of particles vanishes when  $T \neq 0$  and it takes the value different from zero when  $T = 0$ . The second conclusion which is important for the present paper and brings the interpretations of great interest for the physics methodology refers to the interplay between theory and experiment.

The theory and, first of all, its development from MFA to RFA shows the interpretation of the considered effects at the surface. At the same time, the theoretical description is an inspiration of new experimental techniques based on the investigated effects. This interdependence is seen particularly in the surface physics domain. The relation between theory and experiment is an leading factor in the progress of coherent and successive interpretations. The method applied to the long and short-ranged ferromagnetic order at the topmost surface layer as well as a layer in the middle of interface is an example of mutual considerations.

## References

- [1] T. Oguchi, *Seminar on Phase Transitions*, Cetniewo Poland 1973, p. 95.
- [2] L. Valenta, Czech. J. Phys. **5** (1955), 291.
- [3] L. Valenta, Czech. J. Phys. **7** (1957), 127.
- [4] L. Valenta, Czech. J. Phys. **7** (1957), 136.
- [5] L. Valenta, Czech. J. Phys. B **14** (1966), 279.
- [6] L. Néel, Ann. Phys. Lpz **31** (1948), 137.
- [7] L. Onsager, J. Am. Chem. Soc. **58** (1936), 1486.

- [8] M. A. Gusmao and C. Sherer, *Phys. Stat. Sol. (b)* **92** (1979), 595.
- [9] L. Wojtczak and B. Mrygoń, *The 3rd Conference on Physics on Magnetism*, Poznan 1981, 1C-6, p. 95.
- [10] L. Wojtczak and H. Gärtner, in: *Deformations of Mathematical Structures II*, Ed. J. Ławrynowicz, Kluwer Academic Publisher, Dordrecht 1994, p. 307.
- [11] L. Valenta, L. Wojtczak, Š. Zajac, and J. Čulík, *Czech. J. Phys.* **18** (1968), 179.
- [12] L. Wojtczak, *Cienkie warstwy magnetyczne*, Wydawnictwo Uniwersytetu Łódzkiego, Łódź 2009.
- [13] A. Corciovei, *Phys. Rev. B* **130** (1963), 2223.
- [14] W. Brodkorb and W. Haubenreisser, *Phys. Stat. Sol. (b)* **K21** (1964).
- [15] C. Rau, *Acta Physicae Superficierum* **7** (2004), 63.
- [16] L. Valenta and Š. Zajac, *Acta Phys. Hung.* **15** (1962), 29.
- [17] J. C. S. Levy, M. Krawczyk, and H. Puzkarski, *J. Mag. Mag. Mat.* **305** (2006), 186.
- [18] B. Busiakiewicz, I. Zasada, and L. Wojtczak, *J. Phys. Condens. Matter* **205** (2008), 95217.
- [19] Z. Jacyna-Onyszkiewicz and A. Ferchmin, *Czech. J. Phys. B* **23** (1973), 1045.
- [20] A. Ferchmin, L. Wojtczak, and A. Sukiennicki, *Acta Phys. Pol. A* **45** (1974), 851.
- [21] A. Urbaniak-Kucharczyk, *Phys. Stat. Solidi (b)* **109** (1982), K59-K61.
- [22] T. Aubin, J. Ławrynowicz, and L. Wojtczak, *The Fokker-Planck problems in terms of nonlinear parabolic equations. Ferromagnetic fluctuations*, in: *Applied Complex and Quaternionic Approximation*, Roma 2009, 123-148.
- [23] A. Kobeissi, R. Suter, A. Gottlieb, and C. Hohememser, *Phys. Rev. B* **11** (1978), 2455.
- [24] L. Wojtczak and I. Zasada, *Acta Physicae Superficierum* **12** (2012), 178.

Department of Solid State Physics  
 University of Łódź  
 Pomorska 149/153, PL-90-236 Łódź  
 Poland

Faculty of Nuclear Sciences  
 and Physical Engineering  
 Czech Technical University  
 Prague, Czech Republic  
 e-mail: stefan.zajac@fjfi.cvut.cz

Presented by Leszek Wojtczak at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on June 18, 2013

## O MODELU VALENTY I JEGO PRZYSTOSOWANIU DO RZECZYWISTOŚCI II

### Streszczenie

Model opisujący cienkie warstwy ferromagnetyczne, wprowadzony przez profesora Luboša Valentę, na poziomie przybliżenia pola molekularnego (MFA), a obecnie zmodyfikowany w przypadku warstwowej struktury nanocząstek na poziomie przybliżenia pola reakcji (RFA) budzi wciąż duże zainteresowanie zastosowaniem metody we współczesnej fizyce i technologii.

W tym kontekście obecna praca jest przyczynkiem do pracy, poświęconej modelowi Valenty i jego przystosowaniu do rzeczywistości I, opublikowanej w *Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź; Série: Recherches sur les déformations* (**25** (2005), 13, ETN, Łódź, 2005).

Ostatnio otrzymane rezultaty w modelu Valenty zmodyfikowanym na poziomie RFA były prezentowane podczas 15-tej Czesko-Słowackiej Konferencji o Magnetyzmie (Košice 2013) w formie prezentacji posterowej.

Niniejszy artykuł stanowi okazję, aby przypomnieć o tym w 50. rocznicę utworzenia Uniwersytetu J. P. Šafarika w Koszycach.

## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 33–48

*Dedicated to the memory of our Professors**Julian Lawrynowicz, Kiyoharu Nôno, Daiki Nagayama, and Osamu Suzuki***BINARY AND TERNARY CLIFFORD ANALYSIS ON NONION ALGEBRA AND  $\mathfrak{su}(3)$** **Summary**

Concepts of binary and ternary extensions are considered and the extension theory is developed on nonion algebra and  $\mathfrak{su}(3)$ . Concepts of binary and ternary Clifford algebras are studied by the Galois theory. The corresponding Dirac-like operators and Klein-Gordon-like operators are associated and quark models are constructed. As an example the Galois extension structures for  $\mathfrak{su}(3)$  are constructed and the quark model due to Gell-Mann is reconstructed.

*Keywords and phrases:* noncommutative Galois extension, ternary Clifford algebra, ternary Clifford analysis, quark model

**Introduction**

In [5, 7] Kerner has introduced a concept of ternary algebra and has given trials for the quark confinement by this concept. He has also introduced a concept of ternary Clifford analysis and its ternary Dirac-like operator and Klein-Gordon-like operator. In this paper we shall develop a concept of noncommutative Galois theory and discuss the binary/ternary Clifford analysis by use of the binary/ternary Galois extension. In some sense the paper summarizes our previous papers [8–13].

**0.1. Binary Clifford analysis**

We call in this paper the usual Clifford algebra *binary Clifford algebra*. For the case of binary Clifford algebra  $Cl_2(n)$  with generators  $(T_1, T_2, \dots, T_n)$  satisfying the commutation relations

$$(1) \quad T_b T_c + T_c T_b = \pm 2\delta^{bc} I_n$$

we have the generation scheme

$$(2) \quad Cl_2(2) \Rightarrow Cl_2(4) \Rightarrow Cl_2(8) \Rightarrow \dots$$

We can show that this scheme can be described in terms of successive binary Galois extensions (Theorem 1).

## 0.2. Ternary Clifford analysis

The purpose of this paper is to analyze the ternary version of the observations. We develop the concept of ternary Clifford algebra and find standard ternary Clifford algebras, and give their generation scheme. We study the concept of ternary Clifford algebra.

*Definition 1.* We call an algebra with generators  $T_a, T_b, T_c$  *ternary Clifford algebra* when they satisfy two sets of commutation relations (1), *nondegenerate cyclic conditions*

$$(3) \quad \begin{aligned} T_a T_b T_c + T_b T_c T_a + T_c T_a T_b &= \eta^{abc} I_3, \\ \eta^{abc} &= \eta^{bca} = \eta^{cab}, \\ \eta^{111} = \eta^{222} = \eta^{333} &= 1, \quad \eta^{123} = \eta^{231} = \eta^{312} = \mathbf{j}^2, \quad \text{where } \mathbf{j}^3 = 1, \\ \eta^{321} = \eta^{213} = \eta^{123} &= \mathbf{j}, \end{aligned}$$

and *degenerate cyclic conditions*

$$(4) \quad T_a T_b T_c + \mathbf{j} T_b T_c T_a + \mathbf{j}^2 T_c T_a T_b = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad T_a T_b T_c + \mathbf{j}^2 T_b T_c T_a + \mathbf{j} T_c T_a T_b = 0$$

where two of them are identical.

We denote the algebra by  $Cl_3(3)$ . At first we consider ternary Clifford algebras on the nonion algebra. Then we proceed to the construction of generation scheme of ternary Clifford algebras. The heart of this paper is a study of noncommutative Galois extension for the construction of Clifford algebras. Then we can introduce the *ternary Clifford algebra*  $Cl_3(n)$  with generators  $T_1, \dots, T_n$ ,  $n = 3^p$ , and shall find a generation scheme

$$(5) \quad Cl_3(3) \Rightarrow Cl_3(9) \rightarrow Cl_3(27) \Rightarrow \dots$$

In order to discuss physical applications we have to consider a successive noncommutative Galois extension of binary and ternary Clifford algebras. At first we consider the noncommutative Galois extension structure  $\text{su}(3)$ . By this we can obtain the *algebras which admit binary and ternary Clifford structures at the same time*. Then we can expect to obtain the generation scheme

$$(6) \quad Cl_2(3) \Rightarrow Cl_3(3) \Rightarrow Cl_2(9) \Rightarrow Cl_3(9) \Rightarrow \dots$$

This scheme is suggested only in the final section and will be discussed in a forthcoming paper.

More precisely, in Sect. 1 we introduce a concept of noncommutative Galois extension and give some basic facts on noncommutative Galois extensions [2, 12]. In particular, we notice that although the commutative Galois theory is developed quite well, the noncommutative Galois theory has been developed quite little [2, 12]. In Sect. 2 we are concerned with a relationship between binary Galois extensions and binary Clifford algebra. We can prove that any Clifford algebra with negative signature defines a noncommutative binary Galois extension (Theorem 1). In Sect. 3 we concentrate ourselves on the noncommutative Galois theory only for the nonion algebra (Theorem 2).

In Sect. 4 we consider the ternary Clifford analysis on the nonion algebra by the use of ternary Galois extensions. Then we can obtain a standard ternary Clifford algebra which is called *ternary algebra of nonion type* (Theorem 3). In Sect. 5 we can introduce a generation scheme of ternary Clifford algebras of nonion type. In Sect. 6 we construct noncommutative binary and ternary extension on  $\text{su}(3)$ . Then we can prove that  $\text{su}(3)$  has a successive extension of binary and ternary extensions (Theorem 4). In the final Sect. 7 we propose a construction scheme of quark models and thus can obtain the so-called Gell-Mann model [3] by the use of noncommutative Galois extensions.

## 1. Binary and ternary noncommutative Galois extensions

In this section we develop concepts of noncommutative Galois extensions of binary type and ternary type.

### 1.1. Examples of noncommutative Galois extension

We adapt the notation and definitions of our previous paper [10] (the same journal and year, Sect. 1). We quote

**Proposition 1.** 1) *The relation*

$$A'_1(\tau)A'_1(\tau) = A'^{(\pm)}_2(\tau)$$

*implies that*

$$A'^{(\pm)}_r(\tau)A'_1(\tau) = A'^{(\pm)}_{r+1}(\tau).$$

2) *When the condition*

$$x\tau = \tau x' \quad (\exists x' \in A') \quad \text{for } \forall x \in A'$$

*is satisfied, then the extensions (1), (2), (3) are identical each other.*

*We give some examples of binary and ternary extensions.*

**Example 1: complex numbers**

$$\begin{aligned} R[\sqrt{-1}] &= \{\theta_1 1 + \theta_2 \sqrt{-1} \mid \theta_1, \theta_2 \in \mathbb{R}\} \\ &= \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} \theta_1 & \theta_2 \\ -\theta_2 & \theta_1 \end{pmatrix} \mid \theta_1, \theta_2 \in \mathbb{R} \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

**Example 2: quaternionic numbers**

They can be obtained by the *left-module* or the *right-module* noncommutative Galois extension of complex numbers:

$$\begin{aligned} C[\sqrt{-1_2}] &= \{\theta_1 1 + \theta_2 \sqrt{-1_2} \mid \theta_1, \theta_2 \in \mathbb{C}\} = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} \theta_1 & \theta_2 \\ -\theta_2 & \theta_1 \end{pmatrix} \mid \theta_1, \theta_2 \in \mathbb{C} \right\} \\ &= \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} \theta_1 & \theta_2 & \theta_3 & \theta_4 \\ -\theta_2 & \theta_1 & \theta_4 & -\theta_3 \\ -\theta_3 & -\theta_4 & \theta_1 & \theta_2 \\ -\theta_4 & \theta_3 & -\theta_2 & \theta_1 \end{pmatrix} \mid \theta_1, \theta_2, \theta_3, \theta_4 \in \mathbb{R} \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

**Example 3: cubic root numbers.** For a basic *ternary* Galois extension a natural example is provided by the cubic root numbers; cf. [10], Sect. 3 and [12], Sect. 2:

$$\begin{aligned} R[\sqrt[3]{1}] &= \{\theta_1 1 + \theta_2 \mathbf{j} + \theta_3 \mathbf{j}^2 \mid \theta_1, \theta_2, \theta_3 \in \mathbb{R}\} \\ &\cong \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} \theta_1 & \theta_2 & \theta_3 \\ \theta_3 & \theta_1 & \theta_2 \\ \theta_2 & \theta_3 & \theta_1 \end{pmatrix} \mid \theta_1, \theta_2, \theta_3 \in \mathbb{R} \right\} / I_3. \end{aligned}$$

In the next section we shall give bimodule ternary extensions in the nonion algebra.

**1.2. Successive Galois extensions**

We take an extension  $A_2 = A_1[\tau_2] (\tau_2^{k'} = 1)$  at first. Then we consider the extension  $A_2 = A_1[\tau_2] (\tau_2^{k'} = 1)$  which is called *successive extension of  $k$ -nary and  $k'$ -nary* extensions and is denoted by  $A_0[\tau_1, \tau_2]$ . As a special successive extension, we can make the tensor product extension of bimodule type:

$$(7) \quad A_2 = A_0[\tau_1 \otimes \tau_2], \quad A_2 = \left\{ \sum x_{i,j} \tau_j^i \otimes \tau_2^i x'_{i,j} \mid x_{i,j}, x'_{i,j} \in A_0 \right\}.$$

The successive extensions of the other types can be defined in a completely analogous manner. Example 2 gives the tensor product extension of the binary extensions. The basic notations on Galois extensions are listed as 1)–5) in [10], Sect. 1.2.

**2. Binary Clifford algebras and noncommutative Galois extensions**

In this section we discuss relationships between binary Clifford algebras and binary noncommutative Galois extensions, and prove that *a binary Clifford algebra introduces a binary Galois extension*. Here we are concerned with Clifford algebras of negative signature.

Let us proceed to a Clifford pair of noncommutative Galois extensions. We notice that Galois extensions do not necessarily have a structure of Clifford algebra.

Example 4 ([10], formula (26)):

$$R \left[ \sqrt[2]{I_2}, \sqrt[2]{I_2} \right] \cong \begin{cases} \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{C}, \\ \mathbb{H}. \end{cases}$$

We can find only one Clifford pair  $(e_1, e_4)$  for  $\mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{C}$  as follows:

$$(8) \quad \begin{aligned} \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{C} &= \{x_1 e_1 + x_2 e_2 + x_3 e_3 + x_4 e_4 \mid x_1, x_2, x_3, x_4 \in \mathbb{R}\} \\ &= \left\{ x_1 \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{I} & 0 \\ 0 & \mathbf{I} \end{pmatrix} + x_2 \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{J} \\ \mathbf{J} & 0 \end{pmatrix} + x_3 \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{J} & 0 \\ 0 & \mathbf{J} \end{pmatrix} + \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{I} \\ -\mathbf{I} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\} \end{aligned}$$

where  $\mathbf{I}, \mathbf{I} \in M_2(\mathbb{R})$ , is the unit matrix, and  $\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{J} \in M_2(\mathbb{R})$ , is the complex structure. We can see that every pair  $(e_i, e_j)$ ,  $i, j \neq 1$ ;  $i \neq j$ , for  $\mathbb{H}$  is a Clifford pair:

$$(9) \quad \begin{aligned} \mathbb{H} &= \{x_1 f_1 + x_2 f_2 + x_3 f_3 + x_4 f_4 \mid x_1, x_2, x_3, x_4 \in \mathbb{R}\} \\ &= \left\{ x_1 \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{I} & 0 \\ 0 & -\mathbf{I} \end{pmatrix} + x_2 \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{J} \\ \mathbf{J} & 0 \end{pmatrix} + x_3 \begin{pmatrix} \mathbf{J} & 0 \\ 0 & -\mathbf{J} \end{pmatrix} + \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{I} \\ -\mathbf{I} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

We have

**Theorem 1.** For a Clifford algebra  $\mathcal{A}$  with generators  $T_1, T_2, \dots, T_n$ , there exists a sequence of noncommutative binary Galois extensions of  $\mathbb{R}$  which realizes the given Clifford algebra  $\mathcal{A}$ . Namely, we have the following sequences of binary Galois extensions  $\mathcal{A}_k \mid k = 1, 2, \dots, m$ :

$$(10) \quad \begin{aligned} T_i T_j + T_j T_i &= -2\delta_{ij} I_n \Rightarrow \mathcal{A}_k = \mathcal{A}_{k-1} \left[ \sqrt[2]{-I_n} \right], \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, m; \\ \mathcal{A}_m &= \mathcal{A}, \mathcal{A}_0 = \mathbb{R}. \end{aligned}$$

*Proof.* We prove the assertion by induction with respect to  $m$ . Complex numbers can be obtained by the commutative Galois extensions of real numbers (see Example 1). We can give a construction of the Clifford algebras. Let  $T_1, T_2, \dots, T_m$  be a system of generators of a Clifford algebra  $\mathcal{A}_m$ . Setting

$$(11) \quad \hat{T}_i = \begin{pmatrix} T_i & 0 \\ 0 & -T_i \end{pmatrix}, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n; \quad \hat{H}_{n+1} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{I} \\ -\mathbf{I} & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

we get Clifford algebra which is generated by  $\{\hat{T}_1, \hat{T}_2, \dots, \hat{T}_n, \hat{H}_{n+1}\}$  on one hand, and the right (or left) module binary extension of  $\mathcal{A}_n$  by  $\hat{H}_{m+1}$  on the other hand. Hence we arrive at the desired assertion.

Next we construct the corresponding Dirac-like operators: field operators of the Clifford algebra defined by the Galois extension of binary type. Choosing  $\hat{T}_1, \hat{T}_2, \dots, \hat{T}_m$  and  $\hat{H}_{m+1}$  we can introduce the following three operators on the  $m$ -dimensional Euclidean space:

$$(12) \quad D = \hat{T}_1 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1} + \hat{T}_2 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} + \dots + \hat{T}_m \frac{\partial}{\partial x_m},$$

$$D^* = \hat{H}_{m+1} \left( \hat{T}_1 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1} + \hat{T}_2 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} + \dots + \hat{T}_m \frac{\partial}{\partial x_m} \right).$$

The operators are called *Dirac-like operator* and its *conjugate operator* for the extension, and they satisfy the condition

$$(13) \quad \Delta = D^*D = DD^*, \quad \text{where} \quad \Delta = \left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_1^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_2^2} + \dots + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_m^2} \right) \otimes 1_m.$$

We call  $\Delta$  *binary Klein-Gordon-like operator* (or binary Laplace-like operator).

### 3. Ternary noncommutative Galois extensions for the nonion algebra

We recall the concept of nonion algebra [6, 10] and make several constructions of successive ternary extensions. We call the algebra which is generated by two of the following three elements *nonion algebra*:

$$(14) \quad \hat{Q}_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \hat{Q}_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathbf{j} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \hat{Q}_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{j} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

We can see that the linear basis over the complex field can be given as follows:

$$(15) \quad Q_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{j} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad Q_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathbf{j} \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad Q_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$\bar{Q}_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ \mathbf{j}^2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \mathbf{j} & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \bar{Q}_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ \mathbf{j} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \bar{Q}_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$R_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad R_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathbf{j} \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad R_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \mathbf{j} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 \end{pmatrix}.$$

The construction is related with the concept of cubic algebra. Namely, setting

$$(16) \quad T_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad T_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad T_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

we introduce a ternary extension  $\mathbb{B} = R[T_2]$  over  $\mathbb{R}$  which is called *cubic algebra*:

$$(17) \quad \mathbb{B} = \{\theta_1 T_1 + \theta_2 T_2 + \theta_3 T_3 \mid \theta_1, \theta_2, \theta_3 \in \mathbb{R}\}.$$

Then we have the commutative ternary Galois extension which is isomorphic to the cubic root numbers of Example 3:

$$(18) \quad \begin{aligned} \mathbb{B}/I &\simeq \{\theta_1 1 + \theta_2 \mathbf{j} + \theta_3 \mathbf{j}^2 \mid \theta_1, \theta_2, \theta_3 \in \mathbb{R}\} \\ &\simeq \{\theta_1 R_1 + \theta_2 R_2 + \theta_3 R_3 \mid \theta_1, \theta_2, \theta_3 \in \mathbb{R}\}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $I = \{\theta(T_1 + T_2 + T_3), \theta \in \mathbb{R}\}$ . The above enables us describing the structure of Galois extension on the nonion algebra as follows:

**Theorem 2. (1)** *We introduce the following ternary Galois extensions of bimodule type over  $B[\mathbf{j}]$ ,  $\mathbb{B} = R[T_2]$ , called basic extensions:*

$$(19) \quad \begin{aligned} \Delta[R] &= \{xR_1x' + yR_2y' + zR_2z' \mid x, y, z, x', y', z' \in B[\mathbf{j}]\}, \\ A[Q_i] &= \{xR_ix' + yQ_iy' + zQ_i^2z' \mid x, y, z, x', y', z' \in B[\mathbf{j}]\}, \quad i = 1, 2, 3, \end{aligned}$$

$$A[\bar{Q}_i] = \{xR_ix' + y\bar{Q}_iy' + z\bar{Q}_i^2z' \mid x, y, z, x', y', z' \in B[\mathbf{j}]\}, \quad i = 1, 2, 3.$$

Then we have

$$B[\mathbf{j}] = A[\mathbb{R}] \quad \text{and} \quad N = A[Q_i] = A[\bar{Q}_i], \quad i = 1, 2, 3.$$

Thus the nonion algebra  $N$  has bimodule ternary Galois extensions over  $B[\mathbf{j}]$ .

(2)  $R_i, Q_i, \bar{Q}_j$  ( $i, j = 1, 2, 3$ ) generate a subgroup of the Galois group as multiplication operator. Namely, setting

$$(20) \quad A_U[R] = \{xR_1x' + yUR_2y' + z\bar{U}R_3z' \mid x, x', y, y', z, z' \in R[\mathbf{j}]\},$$

where  $U = R_1, Q_j, \bar{Q}_k$  ( $i, j, k = 1, 2, 3$ ), we obtain new Galois extensions, so  $U$  determines a subgroup of the Galois group of extension which is generated by multiplicative elements and which is isomorphic to the permutation group of degree 3.

(3) The adjoint operation gives a part of generators of the Galois group of  $B[\mathbf{j}] [\sqrt[3]{1}]$ :

$$(21) \quad \begin{aligned} \text{Ad}_{Q_i}R_1 &= R_1, \quad \text{Ad}_{Q_i}R_2 = \mathbf{j}R_2, \quad \text{Ad}_{Q_i}R_3 = \mathbf{j}^2R_3; \quad j = 1, 2, 3, \\ \text{Ad}_{Q_i}Q_1 &= Q_1, \quad \text{Ad}_{Q_i}Q_2 = \mathbf{j}Q_2, \quad \text{Ad}_{Q_i}Q_3 = \mathbf{j}^2Q_3; \quad i = 1, 2, 3, \\ \text{Ad}_{Q_i}\bar{Q}_1 &= Q_1, \quad \text{Ad}_{Q_i}\bar{Q}_2 = \mathbf{j}^2\bar{Q}_2, \quad \text{Ad}_{Q_i}\bar{Q}_3 = \mathbf{j}\bar{Q}_3; \quad i = 1, 2, 3. \end{aligned}$$

*Proof of (1).* Clearly,  $B[\mathbf{j}] = A[\mathbb{B}]$ . We prove that  $N = A[Q_1]$ . The remaining assertions can be proved in the completely analogous manner. The statements on  $R_i, Q_j, \bar{Q}_k$  ( $i, j, k = 1, 2, 3$ ) can be obtained by the extension with the use of the  $(Q, \bar{Q}, R)$ -matrices product table: see [10], p.104. From the definition we can see that  $R_1, R_2, R_3, Q_1, Q_1^2 \in A[Q_1]$ . Next we show that  $\bar{Q}_i \in A[Q_1], i = 1, 2, 3$ . From

$Q_1^2 = \bar{Q}_1$  we deduce that  $\bar{Q}_1 R_3 = \mathbf{j}\bar{Q}_2$  and  $\bar{Q}_1 = \mathbf{j}^2\bar{Q}_3$ . Hence the assertion of (1) follows.

*Proof of (2)* is based upon the following obvious lemma:

**Lemma 1.** *With the preceding notation and assumptions we have*

$$(22) \quad \begin{aligned} A_{Q_1}[\mathbb{R}] &= A[Q_2], \quad A_{Q_1}[Q_1] = A[Q_1], \quad A_{Q_1}[Q_2] = A[Q_3], \quad A_{Q_1}[Q_3] = A[Q_2], \\ A_{Q_2}[\mathbb{R}] &= A[Q_3], \quad A_{Q_2}[Q_1] = A[Q_3], \quad A_{Q_2}[Q_2] = A[Q_2], \quad A_{Q_2}[Q_3] = A[Q_2], \\ A_{Q_3}[\mathbb{R}] &= A[Q_1], \quad A_{Q_3}[Q_1] = A[Q_2], \quad A_{Q_3}[Q_2] = A[Q_1], \quad A_{Q_3}[Q_3] = A[Q_1], \\ A_{R_2}[\mathbb{R}] &= A[\mathbb{R}], \quad A_{R_2}[Q_1] = A[Q_2], \quad A_{R_2}[Q_2] = A[Q_3], \quad A_{R_2}[Q_3] = A[Q_1], \\ A_{R_3}[\mathbb{R}] &= A[\mathbb{R}], \quad A_{R_3}[Q_1] = A[Q_3], \quad A_{R_3}[Q_2] = A[Q_1], \quad A_{R_3}[Q_3] = A[Q_2]. \end{aligned}$$

By use of the lemma we can see that the group in question is isomorphic to the symmetry group of degree 3 when we pay attention to the actions  $Q_i$  on  $A[Q_j]$ ,  $i, j = 1, 2, 3$ .

*Proof of (3)* is easy and may be omitted.

*Remark 1.* We may give some demonstration of the generation scheme of the total nonion algebra by elements of the Galois group in Fig. 1.

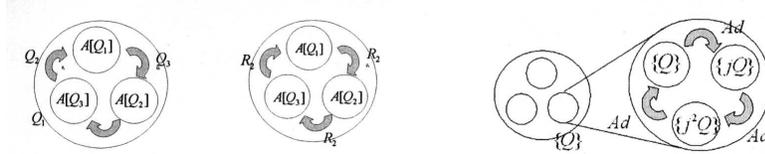


Fig. 1: The generation scheme of the total nonion algebra in relation with (21) and (22).

We may expect that the total Galois group of the extension  $N = R[\sqrt[3]{1}, \sqrt[3]{1}]$  can be generated by the elements in (2) and (3) of Theorem 2.

#### 4. Ternary Clifford algebra for the nonion algebra

We are going to investigate the structure of a ternary Clifford algebra in the case of the nonion algebra. We start with recalling Definition 1 of a ternary Clifford algebra. Next we construct the corresponding Dirac-like operators. Choosing  $\{T_a, T_b, T_c\}$  we can introduce the following four operators on the 3-dimensional Euclidean space:

$$(23) \quad \begin{aligned} D &= T_a \frac{\partial}{\partial x_a} + T_b \frac{\partial}{\partial x_b} + T_c \frac{\partial}{\partial x_c}, \\ D^* &= T_a \frac{\partial}{\partial x_a} + \mathbf{j}^2 T_b \frac{\partial}{\partial x_b} + \mathbf{j} T_c \frac{\partial}{\partial x_c}, \\ D^{**} &= T_a \frac{\partial}{\partial x_a} + \mathbf{j} T_b \frac{\partial}{\partial x_b} + \mathbf{j}^2 T_c \frac{\partial}{\partial x_c}. \end{aligned}$$

The operators are called *Dirac-like operators* and its *first* (resp. *second*) *conjugate operator* for the extension, and they satisfy condition

$$(24) \quad \Delta = DD^*D^{**}, \quad \text{where} \quad \Delta = \left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_{a^2}} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_{b^2}} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_{c^2}} - 3 \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_a \partial x_b \partial x_c} \right) \otimes 1_3.$$

We call  $\Delta$  *ternary Klein-Gordon-like operator*.

By a direct calculation we can arrive at

**Proposition 2.** *A triple  $\{T_a, T_b, T_c\}$  determines a ternary Clifford algebra if and only if it determines the Dirac-like operators (23).*

Now we extend Definition 1 as follows:

*Definition 2.* Consider an algebra with finite generators  $T_1, T_2, \dots, T_n$ . Choose three of them,  $T_a, T_b, T_c$ , say. The triple chosen is called *Clifford triple* when it generates a ternary Clifford algebra.

Hence we can define the ternary Dirac-like operators and ternary Klein-Gordon-like operator.

*Example 4.* The generators  $T_1, T_2, T_3$  of the cubic algebra defines a ternary Clifford algebra; see (16). Hence it is a Clifford triple.

We can determine ternary Clifford triples for the nonion algebra. By direct calculations we can prove the following

**Theorem 3.** *Let  $\{Q_i, \bar{Q}_j, R_k\}$ ,  $i, j, k = 1, 2, 3$ , be the system of linear basis of the nonion algebra; see (15). Then the ternary Clifford triples which are obtained from the system of generators can be listed as follows:*

**Type I** (*cubic extension type*)

$$(25) \quad \begin{aligned} & \{Q_1, Q_1, Q_1\}, \{Q_2, Q_2, Q_2\}, \{Q_3, Q_3, Q_3\}; \\ & \{\bar{Q}_1, \bar{Q}_1, \bar{Q}_1\}, \{\bar{Q}_2, \bar{Q}_2, \bar{Q}_2\}, \{\bar{Q}_3, \bar{Q}_3, \bar{Q}_3\}; \\ & \{R_1, R_1, R_1\}, \{R_2, R_2, R_2\}, \{\bar{R}_2, \bar{R}_2, \bar{R}_2\}. \end{aligned}$$

**Type II** (*basic extension type*)

$$(26) \quad \{R_1, Q_1, \bar{Q}_1\}, \{R_1, Q_2, \bar{Q}_2\}, \{R_1, Q_3, \bar{Q}_3\}.$$

**Type III** (*general type*)

$$(27) \quad \{Q_1, Q_2, Q_3\}, \{\bar{Q}_1, \bar{Q}_2, \bar{Q}_3\}, \{R_1, R_2, \bar{R}_2\}.$$

Hence we can introduce Dirac-like operators for the triples.

## 5. Nonion algebra construction of ternary Galois extensions

In Sect. 2 we have given generators of a binary Clifford algebra in terms of binary Galois extensions (Theorem 1). Now we consider the analogy of this fact for a ternary

Clifford algebra. In this section we introduce a concept of the nonion algebra construction of ternary Galois extensions and a standard construction of successive Galois extensions.

### 5.1. Basic construction by the cubic algebra/nonion algebra

Consider a sequence of successive ternary extensions over real numbers (of  $\mathbb{R}$ ):

$$(28) \quad A_k = \sqrt[3]{I_n}[A_{k-1}], \quad k = 1, 2, \dots, m; \quad A = A_m, \quad A_0 = \mathbb{R}.$$

We consider the case where  $m = 2$ . At first we notice that the successive extension is not unique. In fact, we can obtain a commutative extension by the successive extension of cubic extensions and a noncommutative extension by the nonion algebra (cf. [10], p. 103):

$$(29) \quad R \left( \sqrt[3]{I_3}, \sqrt[3]{I_9} \right) = \left\{ \begin{array}{c} \mathbb{B} \otimes \mathbb{B} \\ \mathbb{V}. \end{array} \right\}$$

We may understand that the *cubic and nonion algebras are ternary counterparts of complex numbers and quaternions, respectively.*

1° We begin with the extension by the cubic algebra. Let  $A_1$  be an algebra with a system of generators  $\{S_1, S_2, \dots, S_n\}$ . Then we can obtain *cubic algebra extension construction*  $A_1[\sqrt[3]{1}]$  by the tensor product extension  $A_1 \otimes \mathbb{B}$ , where  $\mathbb{B}$  is the cubic algebra; cf. (16). Choosing a linear basis of  $\mathbb{B}$ , we define

$$(30) \quad S_i^{(\alpha)} = S_i \otimes T_\alpha, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n; \quad \alpha = 1, 2, 3.$$

2° Next we proceed to the ternary extension

$$A_3 = A_1[\sqrt[3]{1}, \sqrt[3]{1}]$$

by the nonion algebra using the tensor product  $A_1 \otimes \mathbb{V}$ . We choose 9 generators (15) which are now denoted by  $V_1, V_2, \dots, V_9$ . We introduce the elements

$$(31) \quad S_i^{(\alpha)} = S_i \otimes V_\alpha, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n; \quad \alpha = 1, 2, \dots, 9.$$

Repeating the process, we get a sequence of ternary extensions which we call *nonion algebra extension construction.*

### 5.2. Totally ternary Dirac-like operator

Finally we introduce the totally ternary Dirac-like operator. As we have seen, we can obtain the ternary Clifford algebra not for all triples involved, but for Clifford triples only. We notice the following obvious

**Proposition 3.** *Consider a nonion algebra extension construction. Let  $\{S_a, S_b, S_c\}$  be a ternary Clifford triple of the generators; see (30). Then we have the following ternary Clifford triples:*

$$(32) \quad \left\{ S_a^{(1)}, S_b^{(2)}, S_c^{(3)} \right\}, \left\{ S_a^{(i)}, S_b^{(i)}, S_c^{(i)} \right\}, \quad i = 1, 2, 3.$$

Hence, choosing the total set of Clifford triples, we can introduce the following Dirac-type operator which we call total Dirac-type operator:

$$(33) \quad D = \sum D^{(j)}, \quad D^* = \sum D^{(j)*}, \quad D^{**} = \sum D^{(j)**},$$

where

$$D^{(i)}, D^{(i)*}, D^{(i)**}, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, \tilde{m},$$

are the Dirac-like operator and its conjugate operators of each triple,  $\tilde{m}$  being the number of Clifford triples. Introducing the product by taking the usual product only for the ternary Clifford triples and defining other products to be zero, we can introduce the following total Klein-Gordon-like operator:

$$D \circ D^* \circ D^{**} = \sum \Delta^{(j)},$$

where  $\Delta^{(j)}$  is the Klein-Gordon-type operator for the  $j$ -th triple.

## 6. The Galois extension of su(3) and its Clifford analysis

In this section we discuss the structure the Galois extension for su(3). At first we recall some basic facts on su(3).

*Example 5.* We give a basis of the algebra due to Gell-Mann [3]:

$$(34) \quad \begin{aligned} f_1 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & i & 0 \\ i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & f_2 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & f_3 &= \begin{pmatrix} i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -i & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \\ f_4 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & i \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ i & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & f_5 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & -1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & f_6 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & i \\ 0 & i & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \\ f_7 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & f_8 &= \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 \end{pmatrix}, \end{aligned}$$

*Example 6.* In connection with the preceding example we consider the linear space  $L_1$  generated by 3 elements:

$$(35) \quad L_1 : e_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & i & 0 \\ i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad e_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad e_3 = \begin{pmatrix} i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -i & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

We also introduce two linear spaces  $L_2$  and  $L_3$ :

$$(36) \quad \begin{aligned} L_2 : e'_1 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & i \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ i & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & e'_2 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & -1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & e'_3 &= \begin{pmatrix} i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -i \end{pmatrix}, \\ L_3 : e''_1 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & i \\ 0 & i & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & e''_2 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & e''_3 &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & i & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -i \end{pmatrix}. \end{aligned}$$

*Remark 2.* Observe that  $f_8 = (1/\sqrt{3})(e'_3 + e''_3)$ . Therefore, omitting one of  $e_3, e'_3, e''_3$ , we obtain a system of basis of  $\mathfrak{su}(3)$ .

With the help  $L_i, i = 1, 2, 3$ , we can formulate important properties of the binary and ternary Galois extension structures.

**Theorem 4.** 1). *We have the following adjoint representation on  $L_i, i = 1, 2, 3$ :*

$$(37) \quad \begin{aligned} He_1H^{-1} &= -e_2, & He_2H^{-1} &= e_1, & He_3H^{-1} &= e_3, \\ H'e'_1H'^{-1} &= -e'_2, & H'e'_2H'^{-1} &= -e'_1, & H'e_3H'^{-1} &= e'_3, \\ H'e''_1H'^{-1} &= -e''_2, & H'e''_2H'^{-1} &= e''_1, & H'e''_3H'^{-1} &= e''_3, \end{aligned}$$

where

$$(38) \quad H = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & i & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & i \end{pmatrix}, \quad H' = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & i \end{pmatrix}.$$

Then, following the scheme  $\text{Ad}_g : A'[\tau] \rightarrow A'[\tau']$  with

$$\text{Ad}_g \xi = g\xi g^{-1}, \quad g \in A'[\tau], \quad xg = gx \quad \text{for } x \in A'$$

we can define the ternary adjoint extension.

2). *The triples  $\{e_i, e'_i, e''_i\}, i = 1, 2, 3$ , satisfy the conditions*

$$(39) \quad \begin{aligned} Ge_kG^{-1} &= e'', \quad k = 1, 2, 3; & Ge'_kG^{-1} &= e_k, \quad k = 1, 2, 3; \\ \text{where } G &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \\ Ge''_kG^{-1} &= e'_k, \quad k = 1, 2; & Ge''_3G^{-1} &= -e'. \end{aligned}$$

*Proof of Assertion 1.* Setting  $V_0 = \{e_0, e_3\}$ ,  $V_1 = \{e_0, e_1, e_3\}$  and  $V_2 = \{e_0, e_2, e_3\}$ , we have

$$V_2/V_0 = \text{Ad}_H(V_1/V_0) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathfrak{su}(2)/V_0 \simeq V_1/V_0 + V_2/V_0;$$

cf. [10], p. 97, formula (5). Hence we can see that  $\mathfrak{su}(2)$  has the adjoint commutative Galois extension of bimodule type.

*Proof of Assertion 2.* Choosing  $\tau = G$  and setting  $V_i = \{e_i, e'_i, e''_i\}$ ,  $e = 1, 2, 3$ , we have

$$V_{i+1} = \text{Ad}_{G_i} V_i, \quad i = 1, 2, \quad \text{and} \quad \text{su}(3) = (V_1 \otimes V_2 \otimes V_3)/\Gamma, \quad \Gamma = \{e_3\};$$

cf. [10], p. 97, formula (5), and Remark 2. Hence the desired extension follows.

*Remark 3.* As a *summary of noncommutative Galois extension on  $\text{su}(3)$*  we may give the schematic comparison of that extension in terms of  $H_1$  and  $G$ , as shown in [10], p. 106, Fig. 3.

As far as the corresponding *binary and ternary Dirac-like operators* are concerned, it is important to take into account the commutation relations

$$(40) \quad \begin{aligned} e_1^2 = e_2^2 = e_3^2 &= -1, \\ e_1 e_2 &= -e_2 e_1 = e_3, \quad e_2 e_3 = -e_3 e_2 = e_1, \quad e_3 e_1 = -e_1 e_3 = e_2. \end{aligned}$$

After the extension by  $e_0 = \text{diag}[1, 1, 0]$  we have the Clifford algebra which is isomorphic to the quaternion algebra. For  $e'_i$  and  $e''_i$ ,  $i = 1, 2, 3$ , the above assertions are still valid. We are led to the following *binary Dirac-like operators* for  $\{e_0, e_1, e_2, e_3\}$ :

$$(41) \quad \begin{aligned} D &= e_0 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_0} + e_1 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1} + e_2 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} + e_3 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_3}, \\ \bar{D} &= \bar{e}_0 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_0} + \bar{e}_1 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1} + \bar{e}_2 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} + \bar{e}_3 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_3}. \end{aligned}$$

The Dirac-like operators for  $\{e'_0, e'_1, e'_2, e'_3\}$  and  $\{e''_0, e''_1, e''_2, e''_3\}$  can be obtained in a similar manner. We can also introduce *ternary Dirac-like operators* for the above three quadruples which may be interpreted as operators leading to the ternary equations of quarks; cf. [10], Section 6 and 7, pp. 52–61, and Section 7 below:

$$(42) \quad \begin{aligned} D &= e_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_1} + e'_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_2} + e''_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_3}, \\ D^* &= e_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_1} + \mathbf{j}^2 e'_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_2} + \mathbf{j} e''_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_3}, \\ D^{**} &= e_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_1} + \mathbf{j} e'_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_2} + \mathbf{j}^2 e''_i \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_3}, \quad i = 1, 2, 3. \end{aligned}$$

We notice a duality structure between binary and ternary Galois extension as well as between binary particles and ternary particles, as shown in Fig. 2 (Theorem 5 in [11], p. 83).

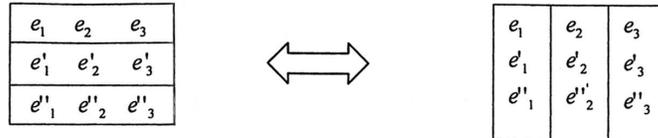


Fig. 2: Duality between the collections of binary and ternary Dirac-like operators.

## 7. Application to the theory of elementary particles

The present paper gives us new elements for conclusions and discussion at the end of [11], in particular in the context of Sections 5–8 of that paper.

### 7.1. The duality of mesons and baryons; cf. Sections 5 and 9 of [11]

A natural model and application of the preceding research is the structure of elementary particles [1, 2]. We know that mesons and baryons constitute with quarks. Moreover, we know the facts that each meson constitutes with a quark and an anti-quark, and that each baryon constitutes with only three quarks or anti-quarks. Till now we have no understanding of this fact. We can give an understanding of it using the duality structure of binary and ternary Galois extensions. In [11] and here we propose a model of generations of particles in terms of Galois extensions. We assume that quarks and anti-quarks are generated by binary extensions.

Hence we can see that the *binary extension generate mesons. Then we have a ternary Galois extension and baryons are created.* From the duality structure between these extensions, as we have seen in the case of  $\text{su}(3)$  (see Fig. 2), we conclude that baryons constitute only particles or anti-particles. The duality structure involved is precised in [11], p. 82, in Theorem 4 and illustrated by [11], Fig. 4.

### 7.2. Construction of quark models

The second application is the construction of quark models. We can realize the Gell-Mann model [3] by using the Galois extension structure on  $\text{su}(3)$ .

At first we notice that we can introduce three kinds of quarks by the binary Galois extension on  $\text{su}(3)$ . We may identify a quark as an up-quark, down-quark or strange quark, by

$$(43) \quad \{e_0, e_1, e_2, e_3\} \Rightarrow u, \quad \{e'_0, e'_1, e'_2, e'_3\} \Rightarrow d, \quad \text{or} \quad \{e''_0, e''_1, e''_2, e''_3\} \Rightarrow s,$$

respectively. The construction given in [11], Sec. 6.4, pp. 84–85, leads to 10 baryons.

### 7.3. Introduction of colours

If we wish to introduce a concept of colours, we may consider the successive ternary extensions

$$(44) \quad C \left[ \sqrt[3]{1}, \sqrt[3]{13}, \sqrt[3]{19} \right] \simeq \text{su}[\sqrt[3]{19}].$$

Transformations  $G_1, G_2, G_3$  governing the nonion extension of  $\text{su}(3)$  and the idea of introducing colours of elementary particles in connection with the transformations  $G_1, G_2, G_3$  governing the nonion extension of  $\text{su}(3)$  are given in [11], pp. 91–93 (in particular, see Fig. 14 and Fig. 16 therein), where the corresponding matrices  $G_1, G_2, G_3$  are given by

$$(45) \quad G_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad G_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathbf{j} \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad G_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \mathbf{j} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mathbf{j}^2 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

## References

- [1] V. Abramov, R. Kerner, and B. Le Roy, *A  $\mathbb{Z}$ -graded generalization of supersymmetry*, J. Math. Phys. **38** (1997), 1650–1669.
- [2] F. de Meyer and E. Ingram, *Separable Algebras over Commutative Rings*, (Springer Lecture Notes) in Math., Springer Verlag Berlin-Göttingen-Heidelberg 1971, 181 pp.
- [3] M. Gell-Mann and Y. Ne’eman, *The Eight-fold Way*, W. A. Benjamin, New York-Amsterdam 1964.
- [4] K. Huang, *Quarks, Leptons, and Gauge Field*, 2nd ed., World Scientific, Singapore 2013.
- [5] R. Kerner,  *$\mathbb{Z}$ -graded algebras and the cubic root of supersymmetry translations*, J. Math. Phys. **33** (1997), 403–411.
- [6] R. Kerner, *The cubic chessboard*, Classical and Quantum Gravity **14** (1997), A203–A225.
- [7] R. Kerner and O. Suzuki, *Internal symmetric groups of cubic algebra*, Internat. J. of Geom. Methods in Modern Phys. **8**, no. 7 (2011), 1487–1506.
- [8] J. Lawrynowicz, K. Nouno, D. Nagayama, and O. Suzuki, *Non-commutative Galois theory on Nonion algebra and  $\text{su}(3)$  and its application to constructions of quark models*, Soryuuisironkennkyuu, Yukawa Institute, Kyoto 2012, pp. 145–157.
- [9] —, —, —, —, *A method of non-commutative Galois theory for binary and ternary Clifford analysis*, Proc. ICMPEA (Internat. Conf. on Math. Probl. in Eng., Aerospace, and Sciences), Wien 2012, AIP (Amer. Inst. of Phys.) Conf. **1493** (2012), 1007–1014.
- [10] —, —, —, —, *A method of non-commutative Galois theory for construction of quark models (Kobayashi-Masukawa model) I. Successive Galois extensions*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lettres Łódź Sér. Rech. Déform. **63**, no. 1 (2013), 95–112.
- [11] —, —, —, —, *A method of non-commutative Galois theory for construction of quark models (Kobayashi-Masukawa model) II. Exclusion principles, quark models, and colours*, ibid. **63**, no. 2 (2013), 79–95.
- [12] —, —, and O. Suzuki, *Binary and ternary Clifford analysis vs. noncommutative Galois extensions I. Basics of the comparison*, ibid **62**, no. 1 (2012), 33–42.
- [13] —, —, —, *Binary and ternary Clifford analysis vs. noncommutative Galois extensions II. The correspondence between the binary and ternary field operators*, ibid **62**, no. 3 (2012), 109–118.
- [14] T. Nakayama and G. Azumaya, *Algebra (II)*, Iwanami Publisher, Tokyo 1954 (in Japanese).

Department of Solid State Physics  
 University of Łódź  
 Pomorska 153/156, PL-90-236 Łódź  
 Institute of Mathematics

Polish Academy of Sciences  
 Śniadeckich 8, P.O. Box 21  
 PL-00-956 Warszawa, Poland  
 e-mail: jlawryno@uni.lodz.pl

Department of Mathematics  
Fukuoka University of Education  
Munakata-shi, Fukuoka  
Japan  
e-mail:nouno@fukuoka-edu.ac.jp

Department of Computer  
and System Analysis  
College of Humanities and Sciences  
Nihon University, Sakurajosui 3-25-40  
156-8550 Setagaya-ku, Tokyo  
Japan  
e-mail: osuzuki@chs.nihon-u.ac.jp

Presented by Julian Ławrynowicz at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on December 16, 2013

## **ANALIZA BINARNA I TERNARNA NA ALGEBRZE NONIONÓW A ALGEBRA $su(3)$**

### **S t r e s z c z e n i e**

Rozpatrywane są idee rozszerzeń binarnych i ternarnych oraz teoria rozszerzenia jest rozwijana na algebrach nonionów i na algebrze  $su(3)$ . Idee binarnych i ternarnych algebr Clifforda są badane przy użyciu teorii Galois. Skonstruowanym obiektom przyporządkowane są stosowne operatory typu Diraca i operatory typu Kleina-Gordona oraz jest zrekonstruowany model kwarkowy Gell-Manna.

## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 49–62

*Dedicated to the memory of our Professors**Bogumiła Kowalczyk and Adam Lecko***POLYNOMIAL CLOSE-TO-CONVEX FUNCTIONS I  
PRELIMINARIES AND THE UNIVALENCE PROBLEM****Summary**

For  $\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]$ ,  $\mu_i \in \mathbf{N}$  and distinct points  $\xi_i \in \mathbf{C}$ ,  $0 < |\xi_i| \leq 1$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, j$ , we introduce the classes of analytic functions  $f$  in the unit disk  $\mathbf{D}$  standardly normalized, satisfying the condition

$$\operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i} f'(z) \right\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

called *polynomial close-to-convex functions*. Basic properties of considered classes are discussed.

*Keywords and phrases:* univalent function, close-to-convex function, polynomial close-to-convex function, function convex in one direction

**1. Introduction**

In this paper we introduce the classes of analytic functions standardly normalized defined by the condition (2.1). The inequality (2.1) generalizes the well known Robertson's characterization [21] of functions convex in one direction, further studied by many authors (see e.g. [9], [22], [8, pp. 193-206]). Note that in Robertson's formula recalled as (2.17), appears a quadratic trinomial with roots on the unit circle. What is interesting, the geometrical property of functions defined by (2.17) when roots of the quadratic trinomial are distinct, is essentially different when they are identical. After suitably boundary normalization, the first case leads to the inequality (2.18);

the second one to the inequalities (2.19) and (2.20) which correspond to the classes of functions called convex in the positive (negative) direction of the imaginary (real) axis (for references see e.g. [3], [15], [16, Chapter VI] and [5]).

In the sequence of papers [12–14] of the second author and in [18] with Yaguchi, Robertson's formula was generalized by considering polynomials of a degree at most two with roots outside of the unit disk. Such defined classes form subclasses of close-to-convex functions and have some geometrical properties (see [14]).

In this paper we replace a quadratic trinomial in Robertson's formula by an arbitrary polynomial  $P_A$  with roots outside of the unit disk. Such generalization is quite natural and seems to be worth of study. One of the question is to characterize these  $P_A$  for which functions  $f$  satisfying (2.1) are univalent. Then (2.1) can be treated as a criterium of univalence. This problem is studying in Section 3. Further discussion on the class of polynomial close-to-convex functions is continued in [11].

Let  $\mathcal{A}$  denote the class of analytic functions  $f$  in the unit disk  $\mathbf{D} := \{z \in \mathbf{C} : |z| < 1\}$  normalized by  $f(0) = f'(0) - 1 = 0$ . Its subclass of univalent functions is denoted by  $\mathcal{S}$ . Let  $\mathcal{S}^*$  denote the class of *starlike* functions, i.e.,  $f \in \mathcal{S}^*$  iff  $f \in \mathcal{A}$  and

$$\operatorname{Re} \frac{zf'(z)}{f(z)} > 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D} \setminus f^{-1}(0).$$

Let  $\mathcal{S}^c$  denote the class of *convex* functions, i.e.,  $f \in \mathcal{S}^c$  iff  $f \in \mathcal{A}$  and

$$\operatorname{Re} \left\{ 1 + \frac{zf''(z)}{f'(z)} \right\} > 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D} \setminus (f')^{-1}(0).$$

For each  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ , let  $\mathcal{K}_\delta$  denote the class of *close-to-convex functions with argument*  $\delta$ , i.e.,  $f \in \mathcal{K}_\delta$  iff  $f \in \mathcal{A}$  and there exists  $g \in \mathcal{S}^c$  such that

$$(1.1) \quad \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \frac{f'(z)}{g'(z)} \right\} > 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Let

$$\mathcal{K} := \bigcup_{\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)} \mathcal{K}_\delta$$

denote the class of *close-to-convex functions*. Recall that

$$\mathcal{S}^c \subset \mathcal{S}^* \subset \mathcal{K} \subset \mathcal{S}.$$

Given  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ , let  $\mathcal{P}(\delta)$  denote the class of all analytic functions  $p$  in  $\mathbf{D}$  with  $p(0) = e^{i\delta}$ , having a positive real part in  $\mathbf{D}$ . Let  $\mathcal{P} := \mathcal{P}(0)$ . The following observation is well known.

**Observation 1.1.** *Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ . Then the following three statements are equivalent:*

- (a)  $p \in \mathcal{P}(\delta)$ ;
- (b)  $q = (p - i \sin \delta) / \cos \delta \in \mathcal{P}$ ;

(c)

$$(1.2) \quad p(z) = \frac{e^{i\delta} - e^{-i\delta}\omega(z)}{1 + \omega(z)}, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

for some Schwarz function  $\omega$ , i.e., an analytic self-mapping  $\omega$  of  $\mathbf{D}$  keeping the origin fixed.

For  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and  $x \in \mathbf{T}$  let

$$\tilde{L}_{\delta,x}(z) := \frac{e^{i\delta} + e^{-i\delta}xz}{1 - xz}, \quad z \in \mathbf{C} \setminus \{1/x\},$$

$L_{\delta,x} := (\tilde{L}_{\delta,x})|_{\mathbf{D}}$  and  $L_x := L_{0,x}$ . Clearly, by (1.2),  $L_{\delta,x} \in \mathcal{P}(\delta)$ . Let

$$\mathcal{P}_0 := \{L_x : x \in \mathbf{T}\}.$$

## 2. Preliminaries

Let  $\mathbf{N}_0 := \mathbf{N} \cup \{0\}$ ,  $\overline{\mathbf{D}} := \{z \in \mathbf{C} : |z| \leq 1\}$  and  $\overline{\mathbf{D}}^0 := \overline{\mathbf{D}} \setminus \{0\}$ . For  $k \in \mathbf{N}$  and  $1 \leq j \leq k$  let

$$\Lambda_k^j := \left\{ \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} : \mu_i \in \mathbf{N}, \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i = k, \xi_i \in \overline{\mathbf{D}}^0, \xi_{i_1} \neq \xi_{i_2}, i_1 \neq i_2, i_1, i_2 = 1, \dots, j \right\}.$$

Particularly,

$$\Lambda_k^1 = \left\{ \{(k, \xi)\} : \xi \in \overline{\mathbf{D}}^0 \right\}$$

and

$$\Lambda_k^k = \left\{ \{(1, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, k\} : \xi_i \in \overline{\mathbf{D}}^0, \xi_{i_1} \neq \xi_{i_2}, i_1 \neq i_2, i_1, i_2 = 1, \dots, k \right\}.$$

For  $k \in \mathbf{N}$  let

$$\Lambda_k := \bigcup_{j=1}^k \Lambda_k^j$$

and for  $j \in \mathbf{N}$  let

$$\Lambda^j := \bigcup_{k=1}^{\infty} \Lambda_k^j.$$

Let

$$\Lambda_0 = \Lambda^0 := \{(0, 0)\}.$$

At the end, let

$$\Lambda := \bigcup_{k \in \mathbf{N}_0} \Lambda_k.$$

For  $\Lambda := \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda} \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$  let

$$P_\Lambda(z) := \prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i}, \quad z \in \mathbf{C}.$$

For  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$  let

$$P_\Lambda(z) := 1, \quad z \in \mathbf{C}.$$

Given  $k \in \mathbf{N}_0$ , for each  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_k$  a polynomial  $P_\Lambda$  is of a degree  $k$ .

Now we introduce the classes  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  being the subject of our studies.

*Definition 2.1.* Let  $\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]$  and  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$ . A function  $f \in \mathcal{A}$  belongs to the class  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  if and only if

$$(2.1) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta} P_\Lambda(z) f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Let us call functions in  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  as *polynomial close-to-convex with respect to  $\Lambda$  with argument  $\delta$* . Given  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$ , let

$$\mathcal{C}(\Lambda) := \bigcup_{\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]} \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$$

be the class of functions called *polynomial close-to-convex with respect to  $\Lambda$* . Given  $k \in \mathbf{N}_0$  and  $\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]$ , let

$$\mathcal{C}_\delta^{(k)} := \bigcup_{\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_k} \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$$

be the class of functions called *polynomial close-to-convex with argument  $\delta$  of a degree  $k$* . Given  $\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]$ , let

$$\mathcal{C}_\delta := \bigcup_{k \in \mathbf{N}_0} \mathcal{C}_\delta^{(k)}$$

be the class of functions called *polynomial close-to-convex with argument  $\delta$* , and given  $k \in \mathbf{N}_0$ , let

$$\mathcal{C}^{(k)} := \bigcup_{\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_k} \mathcal{C}(\Lambda)$$

be the class of functions called *polynomial close-to-convex a degree  $k$* . At the end, let

$$\mathcal{C} := \bigcup_{k \in \mathbf{N}_0} \mathcal{C}^{(k)}$$

be the class of functions called *polynomial close-to-convex*.

*Remark 2.2.* (a) When  $\Lambda := \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda} \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$ , then (2.1) is of the form

$$(2.2) \quad \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i} f'(z) \right\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

(b) For  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$  we get the class of functions  $f \in \mathcal{A}$  such that

$$(2.3) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta} f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

For short, denote it as  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; 0)$ .

For  $\Lambda := \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda} \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$  let

$$(2.4) \quad h_\Lambda(z) := \frac{z}{P_\Lambda(z)} = \frac{z}{\prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i}}, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

and

$$g_\Lambda(z) := \int_0^z \frac{h_\Lambda(t)}{t} dt = \int_0^z \frac{dt}{\prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i t)^{\mu_i}}, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Clearly,

$$(2.5) \quad z g'_\Lambda(z) = h_\Lambda(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

For  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$  let

$$(2.6) \quad h_\Lambda(z) = g_\Lambda(z) := z, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Observe now that (2.1) can be rewritten as

$$(2.7) \quad \begin{aligned} \operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta} P_\Lambda(z) f'(z)\} &= \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \frac{z f'(z)}{h_\Lambda(z)} \right\} \\ &= \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \frac{f'(z)}{g'_\Lambda(z)} \right\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}. \end{aligned}$$

**Observation 2.1.** *The strict inequality in (2.1) holds if and only if  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ .*

*Proof.* ( $\Rightarrow$ ) Let  $\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]$ ,  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$ ,  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  and the strict inequality in (2.1) holds. Since it holds at  $z = 0$ ,

$$\operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta} P_\Lambda(0) f'(0)\} = \operatorname{Re} (e^{i\delta}) = \cos \delta > 0,$$

so  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ .

( $\Leftarrow$ ) Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ . Suppose, on the contrary, that there exist  $\Lambda_0 \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$ ,  $f_0 \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda_0)$  and  $z_0 \in \mathbf{D}$  such that (2.1) with  $\Lambda := \Lambda_0$  and  $f := f_0$  holds, i.e.,

$$(2.8) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta} P_{\Lambda_0}(z) f'_0(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

and the left-hand side of (2.8) equals zero at  $z_0$ . Then, by the minimum principle for harmonic functions, the left-hand side of (2.8) vanishes identically in  $\mathbf{D}$ . Thus

$$e^{i\delta} P_{\Lambda_0}(z) f'_0(z) = ai, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

for some  $a \in \mathbf{R}$ . Particularly, it holds for  $z = 0$ , so

$$e^{i\delta} P_{\Lambda_0}(0) f'_0(0) = e^{i\delta} = ai.$$

Thus either  $\delta = -\pi/2$  and  $a = -1$ , or  $\delta = \pi/2$  and  $a = 1$ , which contradicts the assumption.

**Theorem 2.2.** (i) Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ ,  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$  and  $f \in \mathcal{A}$ . Then  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  if and only if the function

$$(2.9) \quad p(z) := e^{i\delta} P_\Lambda(z) f'(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

belongs to the class  $\mathcal{P}(\delta)$ .

(ii)

$$(2.10) \quad \mathcal{C}(-\pi/2; \Lambda) = \mathcal{C}(\pi/2; \Lambda) = \{g_\Lambda\}.$$

Proof. (i) Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ ,  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$  and  $f \in \mathcal{A}$ . Define the function  $p$  by (2.9). Then  $p$  is analytic in  $\mathbf{D}$  and

$$(2.11) \quad p(0) = e^{i\delta} P_\Lambda(0) f'(0) = e^{i\delta}.$$

Assume that  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$ . Then the inequality (2.1) holds and, by Observation 2.1, this inequality is strict. Thus by (2.9) we have

$$\operatorname{Re} p(z) = \operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta} P_\Lambda(z) f'(z)\} > 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

This with (2.11) yields that  $p \in \mathcal{P}(\delta)$ .

*Vice versa*, assume that  $p$  given by (2.9) belongs to  $\mathcal{P}(\delta)$ . It follows that the inequality (2.1) holds, which means that  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$ .

(ii) Let  $\delta := -\pi/2$  and  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$ . Suppose that  $f \in \mathcal{C}(-\pi/2; \Lambda)$ . Then by (2.1) we have

$$(2.12) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{-i P_\Lambda(z) f'(z)\} = \operatorname{Im} \{P_\Lambda(z) f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Since

$$\operatorname{Im} \{P_\Lambda(0) f'(0)\} = 0,$$

by the minimum principle for harmonic functions, the left-hand side of (2.12) vanishes identically in  $\mathbf{D}$ . Thus

$$P_\Lambda(z) f'(z) = a, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

for some  $a \in \mathbf{R}$ . Particularly, it holds for  $z = 0$ , so

$$1 = P_\Lambda(0) f'(0) = a.$$

Thus

$$(2.13) \quad P_\Lambda(z) f'(z) = 1, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Hence and in view of (2.4) we have

$$z f'(z) = \frac{z}{P_\Lambda(z)} = h_\Lambda(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Consequently, by (2.5),  $f = g_\Lambda$ . Analogously, we prove the case  $\delta := \pi/2$ .

Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$ . Take  $p \equiv e^{i\delta}$  in  $\mathbf{D}$ . Clearly,  $p \in \mathcal{P}(\delta)$ . Setting  $p$  into (2.9) we get (2.13), and hence  $f = g_\Lambda$ . Thus  $g_\Lambda \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$ , so taking into account (2.10) we have

**Corollary 2.3.**

$$(2.14) \quad \bigcap_{\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]} \mathcal{C}(\delta; A) = \{g_A\}.$$

**Historical background**

1. The class  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; 0)$ , usually denoted as  $\mathcal{P}'(\delta)$ , is well known. It contains functions called *of the boundary rotation with argument*  $\delta$ . On the other hand, the inequality (2.3) is the famous criterium of univalence due to Noshiro [19] and Warschawski [23] (see also [8, p. 88]).

2. For  $A := \{(1, 1)\}$ ,  $A := \{(1, 1), (1, -1)\}$  and  $A := \{(2, 1)\}$  the inequality (2.1) was mentioned by Ozaki [20, p. 186] as a criterium of univalence in each case.

3. The classes  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; A)$  with  $A := \{(1, \xi_1)\} \in \mathbf{A}$ ,  $A := \{(1, \xi_1), (1, \xi_2)\} \in \mathbf{A}$  and  $A := \{(2, \xi_1)\} \in \mathbf{A}$ , were introduced by the second author in [14]. Assuming for convenience that  $\xi_1, \xi_2 \in \overline{\mathbf{D}}$ , write (2.1) as

$$(2.15) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta}(1 - \xi_1 z)(1 - \xi_2 z)f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

For specific  $\xi_1, \xi_2$  these classes were examined in [12], [13], [14] and [18].

4. Setting

$$\xi_1 := \alpha e^{-i(\mu+\nu)}, \quad \xi_2 := \beta e^{-i(\mu-\nu)}, \quad \alpha, \beta \in [0, 1], \quad \mu, \nu \in [0, \pi],$$

rewrite (2.15) as

$$(2.16) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta} (1 - (\alpha e^{-i\nu} + \beta e^{i\nu}) e^{-i\mu} z + \alpha\beta e^{-2i\mu} z^2) f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

and denote the class of such functions  $f$  by  $\tilde{\mathcal{C}}(\delta; \alpha, \beta, \mu, \nu)$ .

5. When  $\beta := \alpha \in [0, 1]$  the inequality (2.16) defines the class  $\tilde{\mathcal{C}}(\delta; \alpha, \alpha, \mu, \nu)$  of functions  $f$  satisfying the inequality

$$\operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta} (1 - 2\alpha e^{-i\mu} \cos(\nu)z + e^{-2i\mu} \alpha^2 z^2) f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

investigated in [18].

6. For  $\alpha := 1$  and  $\delta := \mu - \pi/2$  the last inequality is of the form

$$(2.17) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{-ie^{i\mu} (1 - 2e^{-i\mu} \cos(\nu)z + e^{-2i\mu} z^2) f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

and defines the class  $\tilde{\mathcal{C}}(\mu - \pi/2; 1, 1, \mu, \nu)$ . The inequality (2.17) was proposed by Robertson [21] to characterize analytically the class  $\mathcal{CV}(i)$  of functions *convex in one direction* introduced by himself. Partially proof given by Robertson was completed by Hengartner and Schober [9]. A supplement of their proof was done by Royster and Ziegler [22] (cf. [8, pp. 193-206]). To complete the proof, Hengartner and Schober [8] distinguished in the class  $\mathcal{CV}(i)$  three subclasses, namely,  $\tilde{\mathcal{C}}(0; 1, 1, \pi/2, \pi/2)$ ,  $\tilde{\mathcal{C}}(\mu - \pi/2; 1, 1, \mu, 0)$  and  $\tilde{\mathcal{C}}(\mu - \pi/2; 1, 1, \mu, \pi)$  defined, respectively, as

$$(2.18) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{(1 - z^2)f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

$$(2.19) \quad \operatorname{Re} \{-ie^{i\mu} (1 - e^{-i\mu} z)^2 f'(z)\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

$$(2.20) \quad \operatorname{Re} \left\{ -ie^{i\mu} (1 + e^{-i\mu} z)^2 f'(z) \right\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

7. Setting  $\xi_1 = \xi_2 := e^{-i\delta}$  in (2.15) we get the inequality

$$(2.21) \quad \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} (1 - e^{-i\delta} z)^2 f'(z) \right\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

which defines the class of functions studied by Ciozda [2], [3] and [4], called there as *convex in the negative direction of the real axis*. By the analogy to this notion, functions satisfying (2.19) ((2.20)) were recalled in [15] as *convex in positive (negative) direction of the imaginary axis*. Classes defined by (2.19)-(2.21) were recently studied in [16, Chapter VI], [6], [17], [1], [5] and [7].

### 3. Univalence problem

In this section we present some univalence problem of functions in considered classes.

**Theorem 3.1.** *Let  $j \in \mathbf{N}_0$ . If*

$$(3.1) \quad \Lambda := \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda}^j$$

and

$$(3.2) \quad \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \frac{|\xi_i|}{1 + |\xi_i|} \leq 1,$$

then  $h_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^*$ .

*Proof.* The case  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}^0$  is obvious, since then by (2.6),  $h_\Lambda(z) = z$ ,  $z \in \mathbf{D}$ . Let  $j \in \mathbf{N}$  and  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}^j$  be as in (3.1). From (2.4) we have

$$(3.3) \quad \begin{aligned} \operatorname{Re} \frac{zh'_\Lambda(z)}{h_\Lambda(z)} &= \operatorname{Re} \left\{ 1 - \frac{zP'_\Lambda(z)}{P_\Lambda(z)} \right\} \\ &= \operatorname{Re} \left\{ 1 + \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \frac{\xi_i z}{1 - \xi_i z} \right\} = 1 + \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \operatorname{Re} \frac{\xi_i z}{1 - \xi_i z}, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}. \end{aligned}$$

Note that for  $\xi \in \overline{\mathbf{D}}^0$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \operatorname{Re} \frac{\xi z}{1 - \xi z} &= \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\xi z}{1 - \xi z} + \frac{\overline{\xi z}}{1 - \overline{\xi z}} \right) \\ &= \frac{\operatorname{Re}(\xi z) - |\xi|^2 |z|^2}{|1 - \xi z|^2} \geq \frac{-|\xi||z| - |\xi|^2 |z|^2}{(1 + |\xi||z|)^2} \\ &> \frac{-|\xi| - |\xi|^2}{(1 + |\xi|)^2} = -\frac{|\xi|}{1 + |\xi|}, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}. \end{aligned}$$

Hence, from (3.3) and (3.2) we get

$$\operatorname{Re} \frac{zh'_\Lambda(z)}{h_\Lambda(z)} > 1 - \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \frac{|\xi_i|}{1 + |\xi_i|} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Thus  $h_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^*$ .

Observe that for arbitrary  $\xi_1, \xi_2 \in \overline{\mathbf{D}}$ ,

$$(3.4) \quad \frac{|\xi_1|}{1+|\xi_1|} \leq \frac{1}{2}, \quad \frac{|\xi_1|}{1+|\xi_1|} + \frac{|\xi_2|}{1+|\xi_2|} \leq 1.$$

This is easily seen by noting that the function

$$(3.5) \quad [0, 1] \ni r \mapsto \frac{r}{1+r}$$

is strictly increasing.

Since  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_1$  if and only if  $\Lambda = \{(1, \xi_1)\}$ ,  $\xi_1 \in \overline{\mathbf{D}}_0$ , and  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_2$  if and only if  $\Lambda = \{(1, \xi_1), (1, \xi_2)\}$  or  $\Lambda = \{(2, \xi_1)\}$ ,  $\xi_1, \xi_2 \in \overline{\mathbf{D}}_0$ , so in view of (3.4) and Theorem 3.1 we have

**Corollary 3.2.** *If  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_k$ ,  $k = 0, 1, 2$ , then  $h_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^*$ .*

**Corollary 3.3.** *Let  $k \geq 2$ . If  $\Lambda := \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_k$  and*

$$(3.6) \quad |\xi_i| \leq \frac{1}{k-1}, \quad i = 1, \dots, j,$$

*then  $h_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^*$ .*

*Proof.* Since, by the monotonicity of the function (3.5) and by (3.6),

$$\frac{|\xi_i|}{1+|\xi_i|} \leq \frac{\frac{1}{k-1}}{1+\frac{1}{k-1}} = \frac{1}{k},$$

in view of the fact that  $\sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i = k$ , we obtain

$$\sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \frac{|\xi_i|}{1+|\xi_i|} \leq \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i = 1.$$

Applying now Theorem 3.1, we complete the proof. Note that the case  $k = 2$  follows from Corollary 3.2, also.

Particularly, we have

**Corollary 3.4.** *Let  $j, l \in \mathbf{N}$  be such that  $jl \geq 2$ , and let  $\kappa_1, \dots, \kappa_j \in \mathbf{T}$  be distinct points. If*

$$(3.7) \quad \Lambda := \{(l, \kappa_1/(jl-1)), \dots, (l, \kappa_j/(jl-1))\},$$

*then  $h_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^*$ .*

For  $j = 1$  and  $l := k$ , from the above we have

**Corollary 3.5.** *Let  $k \geq 2$  and  $\kappa \in \mathbf{T}$ . If  $\Lambda := \{(k, \kappa/(k-1))\}$ , then  $h_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^*$ .*

Observe that for  $\Lambda$  given by (3.7), we have

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{l \rightarrow +\infty} h_\Lambda(z) &= \lim_{l \rightarrow +\infty} \frac{z}{\left(1 - \frac{\kappa_1}{jl-1}z\right)^l \cdots \left(1 - \frac{\kappa_j}{jl-1}z\right)^l} \\ &= z \exp(\kappa z) =: \varphi_\kappa(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{D}, \end{aligned}$$

where

$$(3.8) \quad \kappa := \frac{1}{j} \sum_{i=1}^j \kappa_i.$$

Clearly,  $\varphi_\kappa \in \mathcal{S}^*$ .

**Corollary 3.6.** *Let  $j \in \mathbf{N}$ . If  $\Lambda := \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda}^j \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_1$  and*

$$(3.9) \quad |\xi_i| \leq \frac{1}{\mu_i j - 1}, \quad i = 1, \dots, j,$$

*then  $h_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^*$ .*

*Proof.* Since, from (3.9) and from the monotonicity of the function (3.5), we have

$$\frac{|\xi_i|}{1 + |\xi_i|} \leq \frac{\frac{1}{\mu_i j - 1}}{1 + \frac{1}{\mu_i j - 1}} = \frac{1}{\mu_i j},$$

so

$$\sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \frac{|\xi_i|}{1 + |\xi_i|} \leq \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \frac{1}{\mu_i j} = \sum_{i=1}^j \frac{1}{j} = 1,$$

and Theorem 3.1 completes the proof.

**Theorem 3.7.** *Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and  $j \in \mathbf{N}_0$ . If (3.1) and (3.2) hold, then*

$$(3.10) \quad \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda) \subset \mathcal{K}_\delta.$$

*Moreover*

$$(3.11) \quad \mathcal{C}(\Lambda) \subset \mathcal{K}.$$

*Proof.* Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and  $j \in \mathbf{N}_0$ . Let (3.1) and (3.2) hold. Let  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$ . By Observation 2.1, the strict inequality in (2.1), so in (2.7) holds, i.e.,

$$(3.12) \quad \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \frac{zf'(z)}{h_\Lambda(z)} \right\} = \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \frac{f'(z)}{g'_\Lambda(z)} \right\} > 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Since by Theorem 3.1,  $h_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^*$ , so in view of the Alexander relation (2.5),  $g_\Lambda \in \mathcal{S}^c$ . Thus by (3.12) and (1.1),  $f \in \mathcal{K}_\delta$ .

Note that by (2.14),  $g_\Lambda \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$ , so by (3.10),  $g_\Lambda \in \mathcal{K}_\delta$  for every  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ , and consequently,  $g_\Lambda \in \mathcal{K}$ . Hence, by (2.10) and by (3.10), we get the inclusion (3.11).

Particularly, from the above by using Corollary 3.2, we have

**Theorem 3.8.** *Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ . If  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_k$ ,  $k = 0, 1, 2$ , then*

$$\mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda) \subset \mathcal{K}_\delta.$$

Moreover, (3.11) holds.

*Remark 3.9.* By (2.10) the classes  $\mathcal{C}(-\pi/2; \Lambda)$  and  $\mathcal{C}(\pi/2; \Lambda)$  with

(i)  $\Lambda := \{(1, \xi)\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$  contain only the convex function

$$g_\Lambda(z) = \int_0^z \frac{dt}{1 - \xi t} = -\frac{1}{\xi} \log(1 - \xi z), \quad \log 1 = 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

(ii)  $\Lambda := \{(1, \xi_1), (1, \xi_2)\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$  contain only the convex function

$$\begin{aligned} g_\Lambda(z) &= \int_0^z \frac{dt}{(1 - \xi_1 t)(1 - \xi_2 t)} \\ &= \frac{1}{\xi_2 - \xi_1} \log \frac{1 - \xi_1 z}{1 - \xi_2 z}, \quad \log 1 = 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}. \end{aligned}$$

(iii)  $\Lambda := \{(2, \xi)\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$  contain only the convex function

$$g_\Lambda(z) = \int_0^z \frac{dt}{(1 - \xi t)^2} = \frac{z}{1 - \xi z}, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

*Remark 3.10.* Under the assumption of Corollary 3.4, consider the class  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  with  $\Lambda$  given by (3.7), i.e., the class of functions  $f \in \mathcal{A}$  such that

$$(3.13) \quad \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \prod_{i=1}^j \left( 1 - \frac{\kappa_i}{jl-1} z \right)^l f'(z) \right\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

By Theorem 3.7, such functions are univalent.

(a) When  $j = 1$  and  $l := k$ , (3.13) with  $\kappa_1 := \kappa$  is of the form

$$\operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \left( 1 - \frac{\kappa}{k-1} z \right)^k f'(z) \right\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

(b) When  $l \rightarrow +\infty$  in (3.13), we get the inequality

$$\operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \exp(-\kappa z) f'(z) \right\} = \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i\delta} \frac{z f'(z)}{\varphi_\kappa(z)} \right\} \geq 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

with  $\kappa$  given by (3.8). The class of such functions  $f \in \mathcal{A}$  is the subject of studies in the forthcoming paper [10].

A natural question which we can consider, is to describe sets of  $\Lambda$  for which  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda) \subset \mathcal{S}$ .

*Definition 3.11.* For  $\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]$  and  $k \in \mathbf{N}_0$  let

$$U_\delta^{(k)} := \{A \in \mathbf{A}_k : \mathcal{C}(\delta; A) \subset \mathcal{S}\}, \quad U_\delta := \bigcup_{k \in \mathbf{N}_0} U_\delta^{(k)},$$

$$U^{(k)} := \bigcup_{\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]} U_\delta^{(k)}, \quad U := \bigcup_{\delta \in [-\pi/2, \pi/2]} \bigcup_{k \in \mathbf{N}_0} U_\delta^{(k)}.$$

From Theorem 3.8 we have

**Corollary 3.9.**

$$U^{(0)} = \mathbf{A}_0, \quad U^{(1)} = \mathbf{A}_1, \quad U^{(2)} = \mathbf{A}_2.$$

Theorem 3.7 and Corollary 3.3 yield

**Observation 3.10.**

$$\left\{ \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : j = i, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{A} : \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \frac{|\xi_i|}{1 + |\xi_i|} \leq 1 \right\} \subset U.$$

For  $k \geq 2$ ,

$$\left\{ \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{A}_k : |\xi_i| \leq \frac{1}{k-1}, \quad i = 1, \dots, j \right\} \subset U^{(k)}.$$

## References

- [1] D. Bshouty and A. Lyzzaik, *Univalent Convex Functions in the Positive Direction of the Real Axis*, *Contemp. Math., Complex Analysis & Dynamical Systems III* **455** (2008), 41–52.
- [2] W. Ciozda, *On the class of functions convex in the negative direction of the real axis, its subclasses and main properties*, Ph.D. thesis, Maria Curie-Skłodowska Univ, Lublin, 1978 (in Polish).
- [3] ———, *Sur la classe des fonctions convexes vers l'axe réel négatif*, *Bull. Acad. Polon. Sci.* **27** (1979), no. 3-4, 255–261.
- [4] ———, *Sur quelques problèmes extrémaux dans les classes des fonctions convexes vers l'axe réel négatif*, *Ann. Polon. Math.* **38** (1980), 311–317.
- [5] M. Elin, D. Khavinson, S. Reich, and D. Shoikhet, *Linearization models for parabolic dynamical systems via Abel's functional equation*, *Ann. Acad. Sci. Fenn.* **35** (2010), 439–472.
- [6] M. Elin and D. Shoikhet, *Angle distortion theorems for starlike and spirallike functions with respect to a boundary point*, *Inter. J. Math. Math. Sci.*, Article ID 81615, **2006** (2006), 1–13.
- [7] M. Elin, D. Shoikhet, and F. Yacobzon, *A Distortion Theorem for Functions Convex in One Direction*, *Complex Anal. Oper. Theory* **5** (2011), 751–758.
- [8] A. W. Goodman, *Univalent Functions*, Mariner, Tampa, Florida, 1983.

- [9] W. Hengartner and G. Schober, *On schlicht mappings to domains convex in one direction*, Comm. Math. Helv. **45** (1970), 303–314.
- [10] B. Kowalczyk and A. Lecko, *On exponential close-to-convex functions*, In preparation.
- [11] ———, *Polynomial close-to-convex functions, II*, Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź. Série: Recherches sur les Déformations (submitted).
- [12] A. Lecko, *On some classes of close-to-convex functions*, Fol. Sci. Univ. Tech. Resov. **60** (1989), 61–70.
- [13] ———, *Some subclasses of close-to-convex functions*, Ann. Polon. Math. **LVIII** (1993), no. 1, 53–64.
- [14] ———, *A generalization of analytic condition for convexity in one direction*, Demonstr. Math. **XXX** (1997), no. 1, 155–170.
- [15] ———, *On the class of functions convex in the negative direction of the imaginary axis*, J. Aust. Math. Soc. **73** (2002), 1–10.
- [16] ———, *Some Methods in the Theory of Univalent Functions*, Oficyna Wydawnicza Politechniki Rzeszowskiej, Rzeszów, 2005.
- [17] ———, *Functions convex in the positive direction of the imaginary axis*, Demonstratio Mathematica **40** (2007), 567–574.
- [18] A. Lecko and T. Yaguchi, *A generalization of the condition due to Robertson*, Math. Japonica **47** (1998), no. 1, 133–141.
- [19] K. Noshiro, *On the theory of schlicht functions*, J. Fac. Sci. Hokkaido Univ. Jap. **2** (1934-35), 129–155.
- [20] S. Ozaki, *On the theory of multivalent functions*, Sci. Rep. Tokyo Bunrika Daig. Sect. A **2** (1935), 167–188.
- [21] M. S. Robertson, *Analytic functions star-like in one direction*, Amer. J. Math. **58** (1936), 465–472.
- [22] W. C. Royster and M. Ziegler, *Univalent functions convex in one direction*, Publ. Math. Debrecen **23** (1976), no. 3-4, 339–345.
- [23] S. E. Warschawski, *On the higher derivatives at the boundary in conformal mapping*, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **38** (1935), no. 2, 310–340.

Department of Applied Mathematics  
 University of Warmia and Mazury  
 Słoneczna 54, PL-10-710 Olsztyn  
 Poland  
 e-mail: b.kowalczyk@matman.uwm.edu.pl

Department of Analysis and Differential  
 Equations  
 University of Warmia and Mazury  
 Słoneczna 54, PL-10-710 Olsztyn  
 Poland  
 e-mail: alecko@matman.uwm.edu.pl

Presented by Zbigniew Jakubowski at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical  
 Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on December 16, 2013

**FUNKCJE WIELOMIANOWO PRAWIE WYPUKŁE I  
WPROWADZENIE I ZAGADNIENIE JEDNOLISTNOŚCI****S t r e s z c z e n i e**

W pracy tej zdefiniowane są klasy funkcji analitycznych unormowanych w kole jednostkowym nazwane funkcjami *wielomianowo prawie-wypukłymi*. Badane są podstawowe własności takich funkcji, między innymi rozważane jest zagadnienie jednolistości.

## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 63–75

*In memory of*  
*Academician Ljubomir Iliev (1913–2000)*

*Bogumiła Kowalczyk and Adam Lecko*

**POLYNOMIAL CLOSE-TO-CONVEX FUNCTIONS II**  
**INCLUSION RELATION AND COEFFICIENT FORMULAE**

**Summary**

We continue the research of [5] by studying the inclusion relation and coefficient formula for the classes of polynomial close-to-convex functions.

*Keywords and phrases:* univalent function, close-to-convex function, polynomial close-to-convex function, function convex in one direction

**4. Inclusion relation**

In this section we deal with the problem of inclusion relation between classes  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; A)$ . Theorem 4.2 presented below was shown in [6] by a different method of proof than that used here. For  $z_0 \in \mathbf{C}$  and  $r > 0$  let  $\mathbf{D}(z_0, r) := \{z \in \mathbf{C} : |z - z_0| < r\}$ .

**Lemma 4.1.** *Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ . If  $p \in \mathcal{P}(\delta)$  is analytic at  $z_0 \in \mathbf{T}$  and  $p(z_0) = 0$ , then  $p'(z_0) \neq 0$ , i. e.,  $z_0$  is the zero of  $p$  of the order 1.*

*Proof.* Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and  $p \in \mathcal{P}(\delta)$  satisfies the assumption. Note that a function  $\mathbf{D} \ni z \rightarrow p(z_0 z)$  is in  $\mathcal{P}(\delta)$ , so without loss of generality, consider  $p \in \mathcal{P}(\delta)$  which is analytic at 1 and  $p(1) = 0$ . By (1.3) of [5],

$$(4.1) \quad \psi(z) := \frac{1 - e^{-i\delta} p(z)}{1 + e^{i\delta} p(z)}, \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

is a Schwarz function. Moreover,  $\psi$  is analytic at 1 with

$$\psi(1) = \frac{1 - e^{-i\delta} p(1)}{1 + e^{i\delta} p(1)} = 1.$$

Hence and from the well known Julia-Wolff-Carathéodory Theorem (see e.g. [8, p. 82]) it follows that  $\psi'(1) > 0$ . But in view of (4.1) we have

$$p'(1) = -\frac{1}{2}e^{i\delta}\psi'(1),$$

so  $p'(1) \neq 0$ . This ends the proof of the lemma.  $\square$

**Theorem 4.2.** *Let  $\delta_i \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and  $\Lambda_i \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$  for  $i = 1, 2$ , be such that  $(\delta_1, \Lambda_1) \neq (\delta_2, \Lambda_2)$ . Then*

$$\mathcal{C}(\delta_1; \Lambda_1) \not\subset \mathcal{C}(\delta_2; \Lambda_2).$$

*Proof.* Let  $\delta_1, \delta_2 \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and

$$\Lambda_1 := \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda},$$

$$\Lambda_2 := \{(\nu_l, \zeta_l) : l = 1, \dots, m\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$$

be such that  $(\delta_1, \Lambda_1) \neq (\delta_2, \Lambda_2)$ . Given  $x \in \mathbf{T}$ , let

$$(4.2) \quad \tilde{f}_x(z) := e^{-i\delta_1} \int_0^z \frac{\tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(t)}{P_{\Lambda_1}(t)} dt, \quad z \in \mathbf{C} \setminus \{1/x, 1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}.$$

Clearly,  $\tilde{f}_x$  is analytic and

$$(4.3) \quad e^{i\delta_1} P_{\Lambda_1}(z) \tilde{f}'_x(z) = \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{C} \setminus \{1/x, 1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}.$$

Since  $P_{\Lambda_1}$  does not vanish in  $\mathbf{D}$ , so by (4.2),  $f_x := (\tilde{f}_x)|_{\mathbf{D}}$  is analytic in  $\mathbf{D}$ . Moreover, as  $L_{\delta_1, x} := (\tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x})|_{\mathbf{D}} \in \mathcal{P}(\delta_1)$ , from (4.3) and Theorem 2.4 of [5] it follows that  $f_x \in \mathcal{C}(\delta_1; \Lambda_1)$ . Thus

$$\mathcal{F} := \{f_x : x \in \mathbf{T}\} \subset \mathcal{C}(\delta_1; \Lambda_1).$$

Showing that  $f_{x_0} \notin \mathcal{C}(\delta_2; \Lambda_2)$  for some  $f_{x_0} \in \mathcal{F}$ , we prove the theorem.

Let for  $x \in \mathbf{T}$ ,

$$\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x}(z) := e^{i\delta_2} P_{\Lambda_2}(z) \tilde{f}'_x(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{C} \setminus \{1/x, 1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}.$$

Thus by (4.3) we have

$$(4.4) \quad \tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x}(z) = e^{i(\delta_2 - \delta_1)} Q(z) \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{C} \setminus \{1/x, 1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}$$

where

$$(4.5) \quad Q(z) := \frac{P_{\Lambda_2}(z)}{P_{\Lambda_1}(z)}, \quad z \in \mathbf{C} \setminus \{1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}.$$

We will show now that

$$(\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0})|_{\mathbf{D}} \notin \mathcal{P}(\delta_2)$$

for some  $x_0 \in \mathbf{T}$ . Consequently, Theorem 2.4 of [5] yields

$$f_{x_0} := (\tilde{f}_{x_0})|_{\mathbf{D}} \notin \mathcal{C}(\delta_2; \Lambda_2).$$

Note that for  $z \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/x\}$  we have

$$\begin{aligned}
 (4.6) \quad \operatorname{Re} \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(z) &= \operatorname{Re} \frac{e^{i\delta_1} + e^{-i\delta_1}xz}{1 - xz} \\
 &= \operatorname{Re} \left\{ \cos(\delta_1) \frac{1 + xz}{1 - xz} + i \sin(\delta_1) \right\} = \cos(\delta_1) \operatorname{Re} \frac{1 + xz}{1 - xz} \\
 &= \cos(\delta_1) \frac{1 - |x||z|}{|1 - xz|^2} = 0.
 \end{aligned}$$

Hence and from (4.4), for  $z \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/x, 1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned}
 (4.7) \quad \operatorname{Re} \tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x}(z) &= \operatorname{Re} \left\{ e^{i(\delta_2 - \delta_1)} Q(z) \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(z) \right\} \\
 &= -(\sin(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Re} Q(z) + \cos(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Im} Q(z)) \operatorname{Im} \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(z).
 \end{aligned}$$

Since  $|\delta_1| < \pi/2$ , so  $1/x \neq -e^{2i\delta_1}/x$ . Hence, by (4.6), by the fact that

$$\tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(-e^{2i\delta_1}/x) = 0$$

and by the injectivity of  $\tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}$ , it follows that  $1/x$  and  $-e^{2i\delta_1}/x$  are the end points of the two disjoint open arcs of  $\mathbf{T}$ , say  $I_+(x)$  and  $I_-(x)$ , such that

$$I^+ = \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}^{-1}(\{iy : y > 0\}), \quad I^- = \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}^{-1}(\{iy : y < 0\}).$$

Thus

$$(4.8) \quad \operatorname{Im} \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(z) > 0, \quad z \in I_+(x),$$

and

$$(4.9) \quad \operatorname{Im} \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(z) < 0, \quad z \in I_-(x).$$

Since  $(\delta_1, A_1) \neq (\delta_2, A_2)$ , so  $\delta_1 \neq \delta_2$  and  $A_1 = A_2$ , or  $\delta_1 = \delta_2$  and  $A_1 \neq A_2$ , or  $\delta_1 \neq \delta_2$  and  $A_1 \neq A_2$ .

(I) Let  $\delta_1 \neq \delta_2$  and  $A_1 = A_2$ . Then  $Q \equiv 1$  and (4.7) reduces to

$$(4.10) \quad \operatorname{Re} \tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x}(z) = -\sin(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Im} \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x}(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/x\}.$$

Take any  $x_0 \in \mathbf{T}$ . Note that  $\delta_2 - \delta_1 \in (-\pi, \pi)$ . When  $\delta_2 - \delta_1 \in (0, \pi)$ , then take any  $z_0 \in I_+(x_0)$ . Then, in view of (4.8), we have

$$(4.11) \quad \sin(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Im} \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x_0}(z_0) > 0.$$

When  $\delta_2 - \delta_1 \in (-\pi, 0)$ , then take any  $z_0 \in I_-(x_0)$ . Then, in view of (4.9), we have again (4.11). Thus (4.10) is negative for  $x := x_0$  and  $z := z_0$ . By the continuity of  $\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0}$  at  $z_0$  it follows that (4.10) is negative for  $z \in \mathbf{D}$  near  $z_0$ , so  $(\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0})|_{\mathbf{D}} \notin \mathcal{P}(\delta_2)$ . Consequently, by Theorem 2.4 of [5],  $f_{x_0} \notin \mathcal{C}(\delta_2; A_2)$ .

(II) Let  $A_1 \neq A_2$ . Then  $Q \not\equiv 1$ . Without loss of generality we can assume that the rational function  $Q = P_{A_2}/P_{A_1}$  is of the simplest form, i.e., after reducing common factors. We consider two cases.

(1) Suppose that there exists  $z_0 \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}$  such that

$$(4.12) \quad \sin(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Re} Q(z_0) + \cos(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Im} Q(z_0) \neq 0.$$

If (4.12) is positive, then we take any  $x_0 \in \mathbf{T}$  in order to  $z_0 \in I_+(x_0)$ , otherwise, we take any  $x_0 \in \mathbf{T}$  in order to  $z_0 \in I_-(x_0)$ . In both cases, by using (4.8) and (4.9), respectively, we get

$$(\sin(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Re} Q(z_0) + \cos(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Im} Q(z_0)) \operatorname{Im} \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x_0}(z) > 0.$$

Hence we see that (4.7) is negative for  $z := z_0$  and  $x := x_0$ . As in Part (I), by continuity of  $\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0}$  at  $z_0$ , we deduce that  $f_{x_0} \notin \mathcal{C}(\delta_2; A_2)$ .

(2) Suppose that for every  $z \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}$ ,

$$(4.13) \quad \sin(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Re} Q(z) + \cos(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Im} Q(z) = 0.$$

Let

$$L_{\delta_1, \delta_2} := \{w \in \mathbf{C} : \sin(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Re} w + \cos(\delta_2 - \delta_1) \operatorname{Im} w = 0\}.$$

The set  $L_{\delta_1, \delta_2}$  is a straight line going through the origin. By (4.13) we have

$$\{Q(z) : z \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}\} \subset L_{\delta_1, \delta_2}.$$

Hence and by the fact that  $0 \in L_{\delta_1, \delta_2}$ , either

$$(4.14) \quad 0 \in \{Q(z) : z \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}\},$$

or  $0 \in Q(\mathbf{D})$ . But by (4.5),  $Q \neq 0$  in  $\mathbf{D}$ , so (4.14) holds. Since  $\{1/\zeta_1, \dots, 1/\zeta_m\}$  is the set of all zeros of  $Q$ , from (4.14) it follows that  $1/\zeta_l \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}$  for some  $l \in \{1, \dots, m\}$ ; say  $1/\zeta_1 \in \mathbf{T} \setminus \{1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}$ .

Set  $x_0 := -e^{2i\delta_1}\zeta_1$ . For

$$z \in \mathbf{C} \setminus \{-e^{-2i\delta_1}/\zeta_1, 1/\xi_1, \dots, 1/\xi_j\}$$

we have

$$(4.15) \quad \begin{aligned} \tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0}(z) &= e^{i(\delta_2 - \delta_1)} Q(z) \tilde{L}_{\delta_1, x_0}(z) \\ &= e^{i(\delta_2 - \delta_1)} \frac{\prod_{l=1}^m (1 - \zeta_l z)^{\nu_l}}{\prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i}} \cdot \frac{e^{i\delta_1} (1 - \zeta_1 z)}{1 + e^{2i\delta_1} \zeta_1 z} = (1 - \zeta_1 z)^{\nu_1 + 1} q(z), \end{aligned}$$

where

$$q(z) := \frac{\prod_{l=2}^m (1 - \zeta_l z)^{\nu_l}}{\prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i}} \cdot \frac{e^{i\delta_2}}{1 + e^{2i\delta_1} \zeta_1 z}.$$

As  $\delta_1 \neq \pm\pi/2$ , and  $\zeta_1 \notin \{\xi_1, \dots, \xi_j, \zeta_2, \dots, \zeta_m\}$ , so  $q(1/\zeta_1) \in \mathbf{C} \setminus \{0\}$ . Thus there exists  $\varepsilon > 0$  such that  $\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0}$  is analytic in  $\mathbf{D}(1/\zeta_1, \varepsilon)$ , so analytic in  $\mathbf{D} \cup \mathbf{D}(1/\zeta_1, \varepsilon)$ , having the zero of order  $\nu_1 + 1 \geq 2$  at  $1/\zeta_1$  and nonvanishing in  $\mathbf{D}(1/\zeta_1, \varepsilon) \setminus \{1/\zeta_1\}$ . Moreover  $\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0}(0) = e^{i\delta_2}$ . Since  $1/\zeta_1$  is the zero of  $\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0}$  of order at least 2, by applying Lemma 4.1 with  $\delta := \delta_2$  and  $z_0 := 1/\zeta_1$ , we conclude that  $(\tilde{p}_{\delta_2, x_0})|_{\mathbf{D}} \notin \mathcal{P}(\delta_2)$ . Consequently, by Theorem 2.4 of [5],  $f_{x_0} \notin \mathcal{C}(\delta_2; A_2)$ , which ends the proof of the theorem.  $\square$

*Definition 4.3.* Let  $\delta_i \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and  $A_i \in \mathbf{A}$  for  $i = 1, 2$ . By  $R(\delta_1, \delta_2; A_1, A_2)$  we denote the largest radius in  $(0, 1]$  such that

$$\operatorname{Re} \{e^{i\delta_2} P_{A_2}(z) f'(z)\} > 0, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}_{R(\delta_1, \delta_2; A_1, A_2)},$$

for all  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta_1; A_1)$ .

By Theorem 4.2 we have

**Corollary 4.3.** *Let  $\delta_i \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and  $\Lambda_i \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$  for  $i = 1, 2$ , be such that  $(\delta_1, \Lambda_1) \neq (\delta_2, \Lambda_2)$ . Then*

$$R(\delta_1, \delta_2; \Lambda_1, \Lambda_2) < 1.$$

Some selected radii  $R(\delta_1, \delta_2; \Lambda_1, \Lambda_2)$  was calculated in [6] and [7].

## 5. Coefficients formulas

In this section we present some relations on coefficients for functions in  $\mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$ .

For  $t \in \mathbf{R} \setminus \{0\}$  the following formula holds (e.g. [9, str. 47])

$$(5.1) \quad \frac{1}{(1-z)^t} = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \binom{t+m-1}{m} z^m, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$  and

$$(5.2) \quad \Lambda := \{(\mu_i, \xi_i) : i = 1, \dots, j\} \in \mathbf{\Lambda}.$$

Let  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  be of the form

$$(5.3) \quad f(z) = z + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n z^n, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

By Theorem 2.4 of [5], the function

$$(5.4) \quad p(z) := e^{i\delta} P_{\Lambda}(z) f'(z), \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

belongs to  $\mathcal{P}(\delta)$  so, by Observation 1.1 of [5], the function

$$(5.5) \quad q(z) := \frac{1}{\cos \delta} (p(z) - i \sin \delta), \quad z \in \mathbf{D},$$

belongs to  $\mathcal{P}$  and is of the form

$$(5.6) \quad q(z) = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n z^n, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

From (5.4) and (5.5) it follows that

$$(5.7) \quad e^{i\delta} \prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i} f'(z) = q(z) \cos \delta + i \sin \delta, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Note that when  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda} \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$ , then  $\xi_i \neq 0$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, j$ , in (5.7); and when  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$ , then  $\xi_1 = \xi_2 = \dots = \xi_j = 0$  in (5.7).

Let us set  $a_1 := 1$  and  $a_{-n} := 0$  for  $n \in \mathbf{N}_0$ . Under this notation we have

**Theorem 5.1.** Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ ,  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}$  be of the form (5.2) and let

$$k := \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i.$$

Let for  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  of the form (5.3) and  $q \in \mathcal{P}$  of the form (5.6) the equality (5.7) hold. Then

(i)

$$(5.8) \quad \sum_{m=0}^k (-1)^m (n+1-m) a_{n+1-m} A_m = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta, \quad n \in \mathbf{N},$$

where  $A_0 := 1$  and

$$(5.9) \quad A_m := \sum_{\substack{\lambda_i \in \mathbf{N}_0 \\ \lambda_i \leq \mu_i, i=1, \dots, j \\ \lambda_1 + \dots + \lambda_j = m}} \binom{\mu_1}{\lambda_1} \dots \binom{\mu_j}{\lambda_j} \xi_1^{\lambda_1} \dots \xi_j^{\lambda_j}, \quad 1 \leq m \leq k.$$

(ii)

$$(5.10) \quad a_n = \frac{1}{n} \left( B_{n-1} + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} B_{n-1-i} c_i \right), \quad n \geq 2,$$

where  $B_0 := 1$  and

$$(5.11) \quad B_m := \sum_{\substack{\lambda_i \in \mathbf{N}_0, i=1, \dots, j \\ \lambda_1 + \dots + \lambda_j = m}} \binom{\mu_1 + \lambda_1 - 1}{\lambda_1} \dots \binom{\mu_j + \lambda_j - 1}{\lambda_j} \xi_1^{\lambda_1} \dots \xi_j^{\lambda_j}.$$

*Proof.* (i) Let  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda} \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned} & \prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i} = (1 - \xi_1 z)^{\mu_1} \dots (1 - \xi_j z)^{\mu_j} \\ & = \left( 1 - \binom{\mu_1}{1} \xi_1 z + \binom{\mu_1}{2} \xi_1^2 z^2 - \dots \pm \binom{\mu_1}{\mu_1} \xi_1^{\mu_1} z^{\mu_1} \right) \\ & \times \dots \times \left( 1 - \binom{\mu_j}{1} \xi_j z + \binom{\mu_j}{2} \xi_j^2 z^2 - \dots \pm \binom{\mu_j}{\mu_j} \xi_j^{\mu_j} z^{\mu_j} \right) \\ & = 1 - \left[ \binom{\mu_1}{1} \xi_1 + \binom{\mu_2}{1} \xi_2 + \dots + \binom{\mu_j}{1} \xi_j \right] z \\ & \quad + \left[ \binom{\mu_1}{2} \xi_1^2 + \binom{\mu_2}{2} \xi_2^2 + \dots + \binom{\mu_j}{2} \xi_j^2 \right] z^2 \\ & \quad + \binom{\mu_1}{1} \binom{\mu_2}{1} \xi_1 \xi_2 + \binom{\mu_1}{1} \binom{\mu_3}{1} \xi_1 \xi_3 + \dots + \binom{\mu_1}{1} \binom{\mu_j}{1} \xi_1 \xi_j \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
 & + \binom{\mu_2}{1} \binom{\mu_3}{1} \xi_2 \xi_3 + \binom{\mu_2}{1} \binom{\mu_4}{1} \xi_2 \xi_4 + \cdots + \binom{\mu_2}{1} \binom{\mu_j}{1} \xi_2 \xi_j \\
 & \quad + \cdots + \binom{\mu_{j-1}}{1} \binom{\mu_j}{1} \xi_{j-1} \xi_j \Big] z^2 + \cdots \\
 & \quad + \left[ (-1)^k \binom{\mu_1}{\mu_1} \binom{\mu_2}{\mu_2} \cdots \binom{\mu_k}{\mu_k} \xi_1^{\mu_1} \xi_2^{\mu_2} \cdots \xi_j^{\mu_j} \right] z^k \\
 & = \sum_{m=0}^k (-1)^m \left( \sum_{\substack{\lambda_i \in \mathbf{N}_0 \\ \lambda_i \leq \mu_i, i=1, \dots, j \\ \lambda_1 + \cdots + \lambda_j = m}} \binom{\mu_1}{\lambda_1} \cdots \binom{\mu_j}{\lambda_j} \xi_1^{\lambda_1} \cdots \xi_j^{\lambda_j} \right) z^m \\
 & = \sum_{m=0}^k (-1)^m A_m z^m,
 \end{aligned}$$

where  $A_0 = 1$  and  $A_m$  is given by (5.9). Hence, from (5.7), (5.3) and (5.6) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
 (5.12) \quad & e^{i\delta} (1 - A_1 z + A_2 z^2 - \cdots + (-1)^k A_k z^k) \\
 & \times (1 + 2a_2 z + 3a_3 z^2 + \cdots + (n+1)a_{n+1} z^n + \cdots) \\
 & = e^{i\delta} + c_1 \cos(\delta) z + c_2 \cos(\delta) z^2 + \cdots + c_n \cos(\delta) z^n + \cdots, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.
 \end{aligned}$$

Thus

$$\begin{aligned}
 & e^{i\delta} + e^{i\delta} (2a_2 - A_1) z + e^{i\delta} (3a_3 - 2a_2 A_1 + A_2) z^2 + \cdots + \\
 & + e^{i\delta} ((n+1)a_{n+1} - na_n A_1 + \cdots + (-1)^k (n+1-k)a_{n+1-k} A_k) z^n + \cdots \\
 & = e^{i\delta} + c_1 \cos(\delta) z + c_2 \cos(\delta) z^2 + \cdots + c_n \cos(\delta) z^n + \cdots, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.
 \end{aligned}$$

Hence for  $1 \leq n < k$ ,

$$(n+1)a_{n+1} - na_n A_1 + (n-1)a_{n-1} A_2 - \cdots + (-1)^n A_n = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta,$$

and for  $n \geq k$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}
 & (n+1)a_{n+1} - na_n A_1 + (n-1)a_{n-1} A_2 - \cdots + (-1)^k (n+1-k)a_{n+1-k} A_k \\
 & = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta.
 \end{aligned}$$

The above two formulas can be written as (5.8).

Let now  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$ . Then  $k = 0$  and the equality (5.12) holds with

$$A_1 = A_2 = \cdots = A_k = 0.$$

Thus we get the equality

$$(5.13) \quad (n+1)a_{n+1} = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta,$$

being the special case of (5.8) for  $k = 0$ .

(ii) Let  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda} \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$ . From (5.7) we get

$$(5.14) \quad f'(z) = e^{-i\delta} \frac{1}{\prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i}} (q(z) \cos \delta + i \sin \delta), \quad z \in \mathbf{D}.$$

Using (5.1), for  $i = 1, \dots, j$ , we have

$$\frac{1}{(1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i}} = \sum_{m_i=0}^{\infty} \binom{\mu_i + m_i - 1}{m_i} \xi_i^{m_i} z^{m_i}, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}_{1/|\xi_i|}.$$

Hence and by the fact that  $1/|\xi_i| \geq 1$  for  $i = 1, \dots, j$ , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{\prod_{i=1}^j (1 - \xi_i z)^{\mu_i}} &= \frac{1}{(1 - \xi_1 z)^{\mu_1}} \cdots \frac{1}{(1 - \xi_j z)^{\mu_j}} \\ &= \left( \sum_{m_1=0}^{\infty} \binom{\mu_1 + m_1 - 1}{m_1} \xi_1^{m_1} z^{m_1} \right) \cdots \left( \sum_{m_j=0}^{\infty} \binom{\mu_j + m_j - 1}{m_j} \xi_j^{m_j} z^{m_j} \right) \\ &= \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \left( \sum_{\substack{\lambda_i \in \mathbf{N}_0, i=1, \dots, j \\ \lambda_1 + \dots + \lambda_j = m}} \binom{\mu_1 + \lambda_1 - 1}{\lambda_1} \cdots \binom{\mu_j + \lambda_j - 1}{\lambda_j} \xi_1^{\lambda_1} \cdots \xi_j^{\lambda_j} \right) z^m \\ &= \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} B_m z^m, \quad z \in \mathbf{D}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $B_0 = 1$  and  $B_m$  is given by (5.11). Hence, from (5.14), (5.3) and (5.6), for  $z \in \mathbf{D}$  we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & z + 2a_2 z^2 + \cdots + na_n z^n + \cdots \\ &= ze^{-i\delta} (1 + B_1 z + B_2 z^2 + \cdots + B_n z^n + \cdots) \\ & \times (e^{i\delta} + c_1 \cos(\delta)z + c_2 \cos(\delta)z^2 + \cdots + c_n \cos(\delta)z^n + \cdots) \\ &= (z + B_1 z^2 + B_2 z^3 + \cdots + B_{n-1} z^n + \cdots) \\ & \times (1 + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta)c_1 z + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta)c_2 z^2 + \cdots + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta)c_n z^n + \cdots) \\ &= z + (B_1 + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta)c_1) z^2 + \cdots + \left( B_{n-1} + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} B_{n-1-i} c_i \right) z^n + \cdots \end{aligned}$$

Comparing the coefficients, for  $n \geq 2$  we get

$$(5.15) \quad na_n = B_{n-1} + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} B_{n-1-i} c_i,$$

which yields (5.10).

Let now  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$ . Then  $k = 0$  and the equality (5.15) holds with  $B_i = 0$ ,  $i \in \mathbf{N}$ , i.e.,

$$(5.16) \quad na_n = e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) B_0 c_{n-1} = c_{n-1} e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta$$

being the special case of (5.10) for  $\xi_1 = \xi_2 = \cdots = \xi_j = 0$ . Note that (5.16) coincides with (5.13).  $\square$

The corollary below is a consequence of the relation (5.8).

**Corollary 5.2.** Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ ,  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda} \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$  and  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  be of the form (5.3). Then for  $n \in \mathbf{N}$  holds:

(1) If  $\Lambda := \{(1, \xi)\}$ , then

$$(n+1)a_{n+1} - na_n\xi = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta.$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(1, 1)\}$ , then

$$(n+1)a_{n+1} - na_n = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta.$$

(2) If  $\Lambda := \{(2, \xi)\}$ , then

$$(n+1)a_{n+1} - 2na_n\xi + (n-1)a_{n-1}\xi^2 = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta.$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(2, 1)\}$ , then

$$(n+1)a_{n+1} - 2na_n + (n-1)a_{n-1} = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta.$$

(3) If  $\Lambda := \{(3, \xi)\}$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} (n+1)a_{n+1} - 3na_n\xi + 3(n-1)a_{n-1}\xi^2 - (n-2)a_{n-2}\xi^3 &= \\ &= c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta. \end{aligned}$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(3, 1)\}$ , then

$$(n+1)a_{n+1} - 3na_n + 3(n-1)a_{n-1} - (n-2)a_{n-2} = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta.$$

(4) If  $\Lambda := \{(1, \xi_1), (1, \xi_2)\}$ , then

$$(n+1)a_{n+1} - na_n(\xi_1 + \xi_2) + (n-1)a_{n-1}\xi_1\xi_2 = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta.$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(1, -1), (1, 1)\}$ , then

$$(n+1)a_{n+1} - (n-1)a_{n-1} = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta.$$

(5) If  $\Lambda := \{(1, \xi_1), (1, \xi_2), (1, \xi_3)\}$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} (n+1)a_{n+1} - na_n(\xi_1 + \xi_2 + \xi_3) + (n-1)a_{n-1}(\xi_1\xi_2 + \xi_1\xi_3 + \xi_2\xi_3) + \\ -(n-2)a_{n-2}\xi_1\xi_2\xi_3 = c_n e^{-i\delta} \cos \delta. \end{aligned}$$

The corollary below is a consequence of the relation (5.10).

**Corollary 5.3.** Let  $\delta \in (-\pi/2, \pi/2)$ ,  $\Lambda \in \mathbf{\Lambda} \setminus \mathbf{\Lambda}_0$  and  $f \in \mathcal{C}(\delta; \Lambda)$  be of the form (5.3). Then for  $n \in \mathbf{N}$  holds:

(1) If  $\Lambda := \{(k, \xi)\}$ ,  $k \in \mathbf{N}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n} \left[ \binom{k+n-2}{n-1} \xi^{n-1} + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \binom{k+n-2-i}{n-1-i} \xi^{n-1-i} c_i \right].$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(k, 1)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n} \left[ \binom{k+n-2}{n-1} + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \binom{k+n-2-i}{n-1-i} c_i \right].$$

(a) If  $\Lambda := \{(1, \xi)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n} \left( \xi^{n-1} + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \xi^{n-1-i} c_i \right).$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(1, 1)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n} \left( 1 + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} c_i \right).$$

(b) If  $\Lambda := \{(2, \xi)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \xi^{n-1} + \frac{1}{n} e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} (n-i) \xi^{n-1-i} c_i.$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(2, 1)\}$ , then

$$a_n = 1 + \frac{1}{n} e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} (n-i) c_i$$

(see [10], [1], [2]).

(c) If  $\Lambda := \{(3, \xi)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{n+1}{2} \xi^{n-1} + \frac{1}{n} e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-i)(n+1-i)}{2} \xi^{n-1-i} c_i.$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(3, 1)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{n+1}{2} + \frac{1}{n} e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-i)(n+1-i)}{2} c_i.$$

(2) If  $\Lambda := \{(1, \xi_1), (1, \xi_2)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n} \left[ \sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1} \xi_1^{n-1-\lambda} \xi_2^\lambda + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \left( \sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1-i} \xi_1^{n-1-i-\lambda} \xi_2^\lambda \right) c_i \right].$$

Particularly, when  $\Lambda = \{(1, -1), (1, 1)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n} \left[ \sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1} (-1)^{n-1-\lambda} + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \left( \sum_{\lambda=0}^{n-1-i} (-1)^{n-1-i-\lambda} \right) c_i \right],$$

i.e.,

$$a_{2n} = \frac{1}{2n} e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^n c_{2i-1},$$

$$a_{2n+1} = \frac{1}{2n+1} \left( 1 + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^n c_{2i} \right)$$

(see [10], [11]).

(4) If  $\Lambda := \{(1, \xi_1), (1, \xi_2), (1, \xi_3)\}$ , then

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n} \left[ \sum_{\lambda_1 + \lambda_2 + \lambda_3 = n-1} \xi_1^{\lambda_1} \xi_2^{\lambda_2} \xi_3^{\lambda_3} + e^{-i\delta} \cos(\delta) \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \left( \sum_{\lambda_1 + \lambda_2 + \lambda_3 = n-1-i} \xi_1^{\lambda_1} \xi_2^{\lambda_2} \xi_3^{\lambda_3} \right) c_i \right].$$

Since  $|c_n| \leq 2$ ,  $n \in \mathbf{N}$ , (see e.g. [3, Vol. I, p. 80]), from (5.8) we get

**Corollary 5.4.**

$$(5.17) \quad \left| \sum_{m=0}^k (-1)^m (n+1-m) a_{n+1-m} A_m \right| \leq 2 \cos \delta.$$

Remark 5.5. (a) Note that from (5.10) we have

$$(5.18) \quad a_2 = \frac{1}{2} (B_1 + c_1 e^{i\delta} \cos \delta),$$

where by (5.11),

$$B_1 = \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i \xi_i.$$

Thus

$$|a_2| \leq \frac{1}{2} |B_1| + \cos \delta.$$

Particularly, when  $B_1 = 0$ , then

$$|a_2| \leq \cos \delta;$$

when  $|B_1| \leq 2$  and  $\delta = 0$ , then

$$|a_2| \leq 2.$$

(b) From Corollary 5.3(2) for the class  $\mathcal{C}(0; \Lambda)$ ,  $\Lambda := \{(1, -1), (1, 1)\}$ , it follows that

$$|a_n| \leq 1, \quad n \geq 2,$$

(see [4], [3, p. 201]).

Observe that for  $\Lambda := \{(k, 1)\}$ ,  $k \in \mathbf{N}$ , we have

$$B_1 = \sum_{i=1}^j \mu_i = k,$$

and then for the class  $\mathcal{C}(0; \Lambda)$  by (5.18) we get

$$(5.19) \quad a_2 = \frac{1}{2} (k + c_1).$$

Setting  $c_1 = 2$ , i.e., taking  $p := L_1 \in \mathcal{P}$ , from (5.19) we have

$$a_2 = 1 + \frac{k}{2}$$

for the corresponding function  $f \in \mathcal{C}(0; A)$ . Since for  $k \geq 3$  we have  $a_2 > 2$ , the following result follows.

**Theorem 5.5.** *For every  $k \geq 3$  and  $A := \{(k, 1)\}$ ,*

$$\mathcal{C}(0; A) \not\subset \mathcal{S}.$$

## References

- [1] W. Ciozda, *On the class of functions convex in the negative direction of the real axis, its subclasses and main properties*, Ph.D. thesis, Maria Curie-Skłodowska Univ, Lublin, 1978 (in Polish).
- [2] ———, *Sur quelques problèmes extrémaux dans les classes des fonctions convexes vers l'axe réel négatif*, Ann. Polon. Math. **38** (1980), 311–317.
- [3] A. W. Goodman, *Univalent Functions*, Mariner, Tampa, Florida, 1983.
- [4] W. Hengartner and G. Schober, *On schlicht mappings to domains convex in one direction*, Comm. Math. Helv. **45** (1970), 303–314.
- [5] B. Kowalczyk and A. Lecko, *Polynomial close-to-convex functions, I*, Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź. Série: Recherches sur les Déformations (submitted).
- [6] ———, *Radius problem in classes of polynomial close-to-convex functions, I*, Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź. Série: Recherches sur les Déformations (accepted).
- [7] ———, *Radius problem in classes of polynomial close-to-convex functions, II. Partial solutions*, Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź. Série: Recherches sur les Déformations (accepted).
- [8] Ch. Pommerenke, *Boundary Behaviour of Conformal Maps*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, Heidelberg, New York, 1991.
- [9] E. D. Rainville, *Special Functions*, The Macmillan Company, New York, 1960.
- [10] M. S. Robertson, *Analytic functions star-like in one direction*, Amer. J. Math. **58** (1936), 465–472.
- [11] W. C. Royster and M. Ziegler, *Univalent functions convex in one direction*, Publ. Math. Debrecen **23** (1976), no. 3-4, 339–345.

Department of Applied Mathematics  
 University of Warmia and Mazury  
 Słoneczna 54, PL-10-710 Olsztyn  
 Poland  
 e-mail: b.kowalczyk@matman.uwm.edu.pl

Department of Analysis and Differential  
 Equations  
 University of Warmia and Mazury  
 Słoneczna 54, PL-10-710 Olsztyn  
 Poland  
 e-mail: alecko@matman.uwm.edu.pl

Presented by Zbigniew Jakubowski at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on December 16, 2013

**FUNKCJE WIELOMIANOWO PRAWIE WYPUKŁE II**  
**RELACJA ZAWIERANIA SIĘ I WZORY NA WSPÓLCZYNNIKI**

**S t r e s z c z e n i e**

W pracy tej będącej kontynuacją pracy *Funkcje wielomianowo prawie-wypukłe I* z tegoż tomu *Bulletin de la Société des Sciences et des Lettres de Łódź, Série: Recherches sur les Déformations*, badany jest problem zawierania się klas funkcji wielomianowo prawie-wypukłych oraz problem współczynników funkcji z tych klas.



## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 77–86

*In memory of  
Academician Ljubomir Iliev (1913–2000)*

*Lilia N. Apostolova***SQUARE ROOTS OF BICOMPLEX NUMBERS****Summary**

The square roots of the bicomplex number  $A = a + ib + jc + id$ , where  $a, b, c, d$  are real numbers and  $i, j, ij$  are the bicomplex units, are found. The solutions of the quadratic equation  $X^2 + pX + q = 0$  of the bicomplex variable  $X$  and bicomplex parameters  $p, q$ , are given.

*Keywords and phrases:* bicomplex number, square root, quadratic equation

The bicomplex numbers are introduced by C. Segre in [5]. Algebraic investigations of these numbers and of the hyperbolic numbers, which form their subalgebra, are made in [3], [4], [7]. Functions of bicomplex variable are study in [2], [6].

Let us recall the definition of the algebra of bicomplex numbers  $\mathbf{C}(j)$ . It is defined as follows

$$\mathbf{C}(j) = \{x + iy + ju + jv : i^2 = j^2 = -1, ij = ji, x, y, u, v \in \mathbf{R}\}.$$

The addition and the multiplication by real scalar are defined componentwise, and the multiplication of elements of the algebra is defined by opening the brackets and using the identities of the units  $i$  and  $j$ . The algebra  $\mathbf{C}(j)$  is an associative, commutative algebra with divisors of zero. So are for example the numbers  $X(ij - 1)$ , where  $X$  is an arbitrary bicomplex number. Actually, the product of this number with  $ij + 1$  is equal to zero.

In the article [3] is proved the following result:

Let

$$p_n(w) = a_n w^n + a_{n-1} w^{n-1} + \dots + a_1 w + a_0$$

be a polynomial in  $\mathbf{C}(j)$ . Then  $w = w_+ + w_-$ ,  $a_i = a_i^+ + a_i^-$ , where  $w_+, a_i^+ \in I(e_+)$  and  $w_-, a_i^- \in I(e_-)$  are elements of the idempotents  $I(e_+)$  and  $I(e_-)$ ,

$$e_+ = \frac{1 + ij}{2}, \quad e_- = \frac{1 - ij}{2}.$$

Then the equation

$$p_n(w) = 0$$

is reduced to the system

$$\begin{aligned} a_n^+ w_+^n + a_{n-1}^+ w_+^{n-1} + \dots + a_1^+ w_+ + a_0^+ &= 0, \\ a_n^- w_-^n + a_{n-1}^- w_-^{n-1} + \dots + a_1^- w_- + a_0^- &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

The set of zeros of the polynomial  $p_n(w) = 0$  coincides with the couples  $(z_1, z_2)$  of the bicomplex solutions of two polynomials with complex coefficients of order  $k \leq n$  and  $l \leq n$ , respectively. A consequence is that the number of the zeros of the polynomial  $p_n(w)$  when it is a finite number is no more then the number  $kl \leq n^2$ .

In this article we would like to find the square roots of bicomplex number

$$A = a + ib + jc + ijd,$$

given in real representation, i.e. to solve the equation

$$(1) \quad X^2 = A,$$

where  $X = x + iy + ju + iju$  and  $a, b, c, d, x, y, u$  and  $v$  are real numbers. We obtain

$$(2) \quad (x + iy + ju + iju)^2 = a + ib + jc + ijd$$

and it is true that

$$\begin{aligned} (x + iy + ju + iju)^2 &= x^2 + ixy + jxu + ijxv + iyx \\ &- y^2 + ijyu - jyv + jux + jiuu - u^2 - iuv + jvix - jvy - ivu + v^2 \\ &= x^2 - y^2 - u^2 + v^2 + 2ixy + 2jxu + 2ijxv + 2ijyu - 2jyv - 2iuv \\ &= a + ib + jc + ijd. \end{aligned}$$

So the following system of four quadratic equations with four real variables  $x, y, u, v$  and four real parameters  $a, b, c, d$  arises

$$(3) \quad x^2 - y^2 - u^2 + v^2 = a,$$

$$(4) \quad 2xy - 2uv = b,$$

$$(5) \quad 2xu - 2yv = c$$

$$(6) \quad 2xv + 2yu = d.$$

The system of two equations (3) and (6) is equivalent to the following system of two equations

$$(x + v)^2 - (y - u)^2 = a + d, \quad \text{i)}$$

$$(x - v)^2 - (y + u)^2 = a - d. \quad \text{ii)}$$

The system of equations (4) and (5) is equivalent to the following system of two equations

$$2(y+u)x - 2(y+u)v = b+c \iff 2(y+u)(x-v) = b+c, \quad \text{iii)}$$

$$2(y-u)x + 2(y-u)v = b-c \iff 2(u-y)(x+v) = b-c. \quad \text{iv)}$$

Now, the system i), ii), iii), iv) can be written as two systems of two equations. The equations i) and iv) gives the system of two equations for the unknown  $x+v$  and  $y-u$  as follows

$$(x+v)^2 - (y-u)^2 = a+d, \quad \text{a)}$$

$$2(x+v)(y-u) = b-c. \quad \text{b)}$$

The equations ii) and iii) gives the system of two equations for the unknown  $x-v$  and  $y+u$  as follows

$$(x-v)^2 - (y+u)^2 = a-d, \quad \text{c)}$$

$$2(x-v)(y+u) = b+c. \quad \text{d)}$$

## 1. Square roots of bicomplex number

### 1.1. Square roots of bicomplex number $a+ib+jc+ijd$ , when $b \neq \pm c$

**Theorem 1.** *The bicomplex number  $a+ib+jc+ijd$ , where  $a, b, c, d$  are real numbers and  $i, j$  are the imaginary units of the algebra of bicomplex numbers  $\mathbf{C}(j)$ , in the case  $b \neq \pm c$  has 4 square roots given by the formula*

$$\begin{aligned} X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) = & \varepsilon_1 \frac{1+ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{a+d + \sqrt{(a+d)^2 + (b-c)^2}} \\ & + i\varepsilon_2 \operatorname{sign}(b+c) \frac{1+ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{-(a-d) + \sqrt{(a-d)^2 + (b+c)^2}} \\ & + i\varepsilon_1 \operatorname{sign}(b-c) \frac{1-ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{-(a+d) + \sqrt{(a+d)^2 + (b-c)^2}} \\ & + \varepsilon_2 \frac{1-ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{a-d + \sqrt{(a-d)^2 + (b+c)^2}}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$  and  $\operatorname{sign}(b \pm c)$  are the signs of the nonzero numbers  $b \pm c$ , respectively.

*Proof.* As  $b \neq c$ , from the equations a) and b) follows the equation

$$(7) \quad (x+v)^2 - \frac{(b-c)^2}{4(x+v)^2} = a+d$$

and as  $b \neq -c$  from the equations c) and d) follows

$$(8) \quad (x-v)^2 - \frac{(b+c)^2}{4(x-v)^2} = a-d.$$

From the equation (7) we obtain the biquadratic equation

$$4(x+v)^4 - 4(a+d)(x+v)^2 = (b-c)^2,$$

which is equivalent to the equation

$$(2(x+v)^2 - a - d)^2 = (b-c)^2 + (a+d)^2.$$

As we ask the real solutions of this equation, we obtain the solution, satisfying the inequality

$$2(x+v)^2 = a+d + \sqrt{(a+d)^2 + (b-c)^2} \geq 0,$$

namely,

$$(9) \quad x+v = \varepsilon_1 \sqrt{\frac{a+d}{2} + \frac{1}{2}\sqrt{(a+d)^2 + (b-c)^2}},$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1$ .

From the equation (8) we obtain the biquadratic equation

$$4(x-v)^4 - 4(a-d)(x-v)^2 = (b+c)^2,$$

which is equivalent to the equation

$$(2(x-v)^2 - a - d)^2 = (b+c)^2 + (a-d)^2.$$

As we ask the real solutions of this equation, we consider the solution, for which

$$2(x-v)^2 = a-d + \sqrt{(a-d)^2 + (b+c)^2} \geq 0$$

and finally

$$(10) \quad x-v = \varepsilon_2 \sqrt{\frac{a-d}{2} + \frac{1}{2}\sqrt{(a-d)^2 + (b+c)^2}},$$

where  $\varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$ .

From the equations (9) and (10) we obtain the following numbers for  $x$  and  $v$  in the case  $b \neq \pm c$

$$x = \frac{\varepsilon_1}{2} \sqrt{\frac{a+d}{2} + \frac{1}{2}\sqrt{(a+d)^2 + (b-c)^2}} + \frac{\varepsilon_2}{2} \sqrt{\frac{a-d}{2} + \frac{1}{2}\sqrt{(a-d)^2 + (b+c)^2}}$$

and

$$v = \frac{\varepsilon_1}{2} \sqrt{\frac{a+d}{2} + \frac{1}{2}\sqrt{(a+d)^2 + (b-c)^2}} - \frac{\varepsilon_2}{2} \sqrt{\frac{a-d}{2} + \frac{1}{2}\sqrt{(a-d)^2 + (b+c)^2}}.$$

To find the real numbers  $y$  and  $u$  in the considered case we work as follows. As  $b \neq c$  from the equations a) and b) follows the equation

$$(11) \quad \frac{(b-c)^2}{4(y-u)^2} - (y-u)^2 = a+d,$$

and as  $b \neq -c$  from the equations c) and d) follows

$$(12) \quad \frac{(b+c)^2}{4(y+u)^2} - (y+u)^2 = a-d.$$

From the equation (11) we obtain the biquadratic equation

$$4(y - u)^4 + 4(a + d)(y - u)^2 = (b - c)^2,$$

which is equivalent to the equation

$$(2(y - u)^2 + a + d)^2 = (a + d)^2 + (b + c)^2.$$

As we ask the real solutions of this equation, we obtain

$$2(y - u)^2 = -a - d + \sqrt{(a + d)^2 + (b - c)^2} \geq 0$$

and finally using the conditions in the equations (9) and equation a) we obtain

$$(13) \quad y - u = \frac{\varepsilon_1}{\sqrt{2}} \text{sign}(b-c) \sqrt{-(a + d) + \sqrt{(a + d)^2 + (b - c)^2}},$$

where  $\text{sing}(b - c)$  is equal to 1 when the real number  $b - c$  is positive and to  $-1$ , when this number is negative.

We obtain the biquadratic equation from the equation (12)

$$4(y + u)^4 + 4(a - d)(y + u)^2 = (b + c)^2,$$

which is equivalent to the equation

$$(2(y + u)^2 + a - d)^2 = (a - d)^2 + (b + c)^2.$$

As we ask the real solutions of this equation, we obtain

$$2(y + u)^2 = -a + d + \sqrt{(a - d)^2 + (b + c)^2} > 0$$

and finally

$$(14) \quad y + u = \frac{\varepsilon_2}{2} \text{sign}(b + c) \sqrt{-(a - d) + \sqrt{(a - d)^2 + (b + c)^2}},$$

where  $\text{sign}(b + c)$  is equal to the sign of the real nonzero number  $b + c$ .

We obtain the following real numbers  $y$  and  $u$  from the equations (13) and (14)

$$y = \frac{\varepsilon_1}{2\sqrt{2}} \text{sign}(b - c) \sqrt{-(a + d) + \sqrt{(a + d)^2 + (b - c)^2}} \\ + \frac{\varepsilon_2}{2\sqrt{2}} \text{sign}(b + c) \sqrt{-(a - d) + \sqrt{(a - d)^2 + (b + c)^2}}$$

and

$$u = \frac{\varepsilon_1}{2\sqrt{2}} \text{sign}(b - c) \sqrt{-(a + d) + \sqrt{(a + d)^2 + (b - c)^2}} \\ - \frac{\varepsilon_2}{2\sqrt{2}} \text{sign}(b + c) \sqrt{-(a - d) + \sqrt{(a - d)^2 + (b + c)^2}},$$

where  $\text{sign}(b - c)$  is equal to the sign of the real nonzero number  $b - c$  and  $\text{sign}(b + c)$  is equal to the sign of the real nonzero number  $b + c$ .

Then we obtain solution  $x + iy + ju + jv$  in the considered case. The square roots are the following bicomplex numbers

$$\begin{aligned}
 \sqrt{A} &= \sqrt{a + ib + jc + ijd} = x + iy + ju + jv = X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) \\
 &= \varepsilon_1 \frac{1 + ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{a + d + \sqrt{(a + d)^2 + (b - c)^2}} \\
 (15) \quad &+ i\varepsilon_2 \operatorname{sign}(b + c) \frac{1 + ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{-(a - d) + \sqrt{(a - d)^2 + (b + c)^2}} \\
 &+ i\varepsilon_1 \operatorname{sign}(b - c) \frac{1 - ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{-(a + d) + \sqrt{(a + d)^2 + (b - c)^2}} \\
 &+ \varepsilon_2 \frac{1 - ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{a - d + \sqrt{(a - d)^2 + (b + c)^2}},
 \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$ ,  $\operatorname{sign}(b + c)$  are the signs of the nonzero numbers  $b + c$  and  $\operatorname{sign}(b - c)$  are the signs of the nonzero numbers  $b - c$ .

### 1.2. Square roots of bicomplex number $a + ib + jc + ijd$ , when $b = c \neq 0$ and $b = -c \neq 0$

**Theorem 2.** *The bicomplex number  $a + ib + jc + ijd$ , where  $a, b, c, d$  are real numbers and  $i, j$  are the imaginary units of the algebra of bicomplex numbers  $\mathbf{C}(j)$ , in the case  $b = c \neq 0$  has the following square roots*

- in the case  $a + d < 0$  there exist 4 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}
 X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) &= \sqrt{a + (i + j)b + ijd} \\
 &= \varepsilon_1 \frac{(1 - ij)}{2\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{a - d + \sqrt{4b^2 + (a - d)^2}} + i\varepsilon_2 \frac{(1 + ij)}{2} \sqrt{-a - d} \\
 &+ i\varepsilon_1 \frac{(1 - ij)}{2\sqrt{2}} \operatorname{sign} b \sqrt{-(a - d) + \sqrt{4b^2 + (a - d)^2}},
 \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1$ ,  $\varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$  when  $a + d < 0$ .

- in the case  $a + d > 0$  there exist 4 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}
 X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) &= \sqrt{a + (i + j)b + ijd} \\
 &= \frac{1 + ij}{2} \varepsilon_1 \sqrt{a + d} + \frac{1 - ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \varepsilon_2 \sqrt{a - d + \sqrt{4b^2 + (a - d)^2}} \\
 &+ \frac{i(1 - ij) \operatorname{sign} b}{2\sqrt{2}} \varepsilon_2 \sqrt{-(a - d) + \sqrt{4b^2 + (a - d)^2}},
 \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1$ ,  $\varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$ .

- in the case  $a = d$  there exist 2 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}
 X(\varepsilon_1) &= \sqrt{a(1 + ij) + b(i + j)} \\
 &= \frac{1 - ij}{2} \varepsilon_1 \sqrt{a + \sqrt{a^2 + b^2}} + \frac{i(1 - ij) \operatorname{sign} b}{8} \varepsilon_1 \sqrt{-a + \sqrt{a^2 + b^2}},
 \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1$ .

The proof of the theorem is similar to the proof of the Theorem 1.

**Theorem 3.** *The bicomplex number  $a+ib+jc+ijd$ , where  $a, b, c, d$  are real numbers and  $i, j$  are the imaginary units of the algebra of bicomplex numbers  $\mathbf{C}(j)$ , in the case  $b = -c \neq 0$  has square roots as follows*

– in the case  $a - d < 0$  there exist 4 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned} \sqrt{a + (i-j)b + ijd} &= x + iy + ju + jv = X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) \\ &= \frac{(1+ij)}{\sqrt{2}} \varepsilon_1 \sqrt{a+d + \sqrt{4b^2 + (a+d)^2}} + \frac{i(1-ij)}{2} \varepsilon_1 \sqrt{-a+d} + \\ &\quad + \frac{i(1+ij) \operatorname{sign} b}{2\sqrt{2}} \varepsilon_2 \sqrt{-a-d + \sqrt{4b^2 + (a+d)^2}}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1, \varepsilon_2 = \pm 1, a < d$ .

– in the case  $a - d > 0$  there exist 4 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned} \sqrt{A} = \sqrt{a + (i-j)b + ijd} &= x + iy + ju + jv = X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) \\ &= \varepsilon_1 \frac{(1-ij)}{2} \sqrt{a-d} + \frac{1+ij}{2\sqrt{2}} \varepsilon_2 \sqrt{a+d + \sqrt{(a+d)^2 + 4b^2}} \\ &\quad + \frac{i(1+ij) \operatorname{sign} b}{2\sqrt{2}} \varepsilon_2 \sqrt{-(a+d) + \sqrt{(a+d)^2 + 4b^2}}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1, \varepsilon_2 = \pm 1, a > d$ .

– in the case  $a = d$  there exist 2 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned} X(\varepsilon_1) &= \sqrt{a(1+ij) + b(i-j)} \\ &= \frac{1+ij}{2} \varepsilon_1 \sqrt{a + \sqrt{a^2 + b^2}} + \frac{i(1+ij) \operatorname{sign} b}{8} \varepsilon_1 \sqrt{-a + \sqrt{a^2 + b^2}}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1$ .

The proof of the theorem is similar to the proof of the Theorem 1.

### 1.3. Square roots of bicomplex number $a + ib + jc + ijd$ , when $b = c = 0$

**Theorem 4.** *The bicomplex number  $a+ib+jc+ijd$ , where  $a, b, c, d$  are real numbers and  $i, j$  are the imaginary units of the algebra of bicomplex numbers  $\mathbf{C}(j)$  in the case  $b = c = 0$  has square roots as follows*

– in the case  $a < -|d|$  there exist 4 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned} \sqrt{A} = \sqrt{a + ijd} &= iy + ju = X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) \\ &= \frac{i(1-ij)\varepsilon_1}{2} \sqrt{-a-d} + \frac{i(1+ij)\varepsilon_2}{2} \sqrt{-a+d}, \end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1, \varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$ ;

– in the case  $a > |d|$  there exist 4 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}\sqrt{A} &= \sqrt{a + ijd} = x + i y v = X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) \\ &= \frac{(1 + ij)\varepsilon_1}{2}\sqrt{a + d} + \frac{(1 - ij)\varepsilon_2}{2}\sqrt{a - d},\end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$ ;

- in the case  $d > |a|$  there exist 4 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}\sqrt{A} &= \sqrt{a + ijd} = x(1 + ij) + iy(1 - ij) = X_1 \\ &= \frac{(1 + ij)}{2}\varepsilon_1\sqrt{a + d} + i\frac{(1 - ij)}{2}\varepsilon_2\sqrt{-a + d},\end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$ ;

- in the case  $|a| > d$  there exist 4 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}\sqrt{A} &= \sqrt{a(1 - ij)} = x(1 - ij) + iy(1 + ij) = X(\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2) \\ &= \frac{(1 - ij)}{2}\varepsilon_1\sqrt{a - d} + i\frac{(1 + ij)}{2}\varepsilon_2\sqrt{-a - d},\end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2 = \pm 1$ ;

- in the case  $a = d \neq 0$  we shall find the square roots of the element  $a(1 + ij)$

which belongs to the idempotent  $I\left(\frac{1 + ij}{2}\right)$ . In this case there exist 2 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}\sqrt{A} &= \sqrt{a(1 + ij)} = X(\varepsilon_1) \\ &= \begin{cases} \varepsilon_1 \frac{1 + ij}{2} \sqrt{a} & \text{if } a > 0, \\ i\varepsilon_1 \frac{1 + ij}{2} \sqrt{-a} & \text{if } a < 0, \end{cases}\end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1$ ;

- in the case  $-a = d \neq 0$  we shall find the square roots of the element  $a(1 - ij)$

which belongs to the idempotent  $I\left(\frac{1 - ij}{2}\right)$ , in this case there exist 2 square roots, given by the formula

$$\begin{aligned}\sqrt{A} &= \sqrt{a(1 - ij)} = X(\varepsilon_1) \\ &= \begin{cases} \varepsilon_1 \frac{1 - ij}{2} \sqrt{a} & \text{if } a > 0, \\ i\varepsilon_1 \frac{1 - ij}{2} \sqrt{-a} & \text{if } a < 0, \end{cases}\end{aligned}$$

where  $\varepsilon_1 = \pm 1$ .

**Theorem 5.** *The algebra of bicomplex numbers  $\mathbf{C}(j)$  does not admit solutions of the equation (1) for the bicomplex number  $A = a + ib + jc + ijd$  in the case  $a = b = c = d = 0$ , i.e. the equation  $X^2 = 0$  does not admit nonzero solutions.*

*Proof.* In this case the system of equations (3), (4), (5), (6) seems as follows

$$x^2 - y^2 - u^2 + v^2 = 0, \quad 2xy - 2uv = 0, \quad 2xu - 2yv = 0, \quad 2xv + 2yu = 0.$$

We obtain the equivalent system of equations

$$(x+v)^2 = (y-u)^2, \quad (x-v)^2 = (y+u)^2, \quad (x+v)(y-u) = 0, \quad (x-v)(y+u) = 0,$$

which is equivalent to the following system of four linear equations of first order

$$\begin{aligned} x+v+y-u &= 0, & x-v+y+u &= 0, \\ x+v-y+u &= 0, & x-v-y-u &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

But this system of linear equations has only the zero solutions.

## 2. Quadratic equation

We shall write the solutions of the quadratic equation in the algebra  $\mathbf{C}(j)$  of the bicomplex numbers, using the find above square roots of bicomplex number.

**Theorem 6.** *The quadratic equation*

$$x^2 + px + q = 0$$

*with bicomplex coefficients*

$p, q \in \mathbf{C}(j)$ ,  $p = p_0 + ip_1 + jp_2 + jip_3$ ,  $q = q_0 + iq_1 + jq_2 + ijq_3$ ,  $p_k, q_k \in \mathbf{R}$  for  $k = 0, 1, 2, 3$  has the following solutions

$$x_+ = -\frac{p}{2} + X \quad \text{and} \quad x_- = -\frac{p}{2} - X,$$

where

$$X = \sqrt{\frac{p^2}{4} - q}$$

is one of the given in section 1 bicomplex square roots of the bicomplex number  $\frac{1}{4}p^2 - q$ .

## References

- [1] L. N. Apostolova, *Square roots of bicomplex number and quadratic equation of bicomplex variable*, Preprint IMI-BAS, Section Analyse, Geometry and Topology **8** (2011), 17.
- [2] B. G. Price, *An Introduction to Multicomplex Spaces and Functions*, M. Dekker, Inc. (1991).
- [3] A. A. Pogorui, and R. M. Rodrigues-Dangino, *On the set of zeros of bicomplex polynomials*, Complex Variables and Elliptic Equations **51**, no. 7 (2006), 725–730.
- [4] D. Rochon and M. Shapiro, *On algebraic properties of bicomplex and hyperbolic numbers*, Annal. Univ. Oradea, Fasc. Math. **11** (2004), 71–110.
- [5] C. Segre, *Le rappresentazioni reali delle forme complesse e gli enti iperalgebrici*, Math. Annalen **40** (1892), 597–665.
- [6] S. Rönn, *Bicomplex algebra and function theory*, (ArXivmath.CV/0101200 v1, 24 Jan 2001) 68pp.
- [7] I. Yaglom, *Complex Numbers in Geometry*, Academic Press, New York 1968.

Institute of Mathematics and Informatics  
 Bulgarian Academy of Sciences  
 "Acad. G. Bontchev" Str., Block 8  
 B-1113 Sofia, Bulgaria  
 e-mail: liliana@math.bas.bg

Presented by Leon Mikołajczyk at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on December 16, 2013

## PIERWIASTKI KWADRATOWE Z LICZB BI-ZESPOLONYCH

### S t r e s z c z e n i e

Wyznaczono pierwiastki kwadratowe z liczby bi-zespolonej  $A = a + ib + jc + ijd$ , gdzie  $a, b, s, d$  są liczbami rzeczywistymi,  $i, j, ij$  zaś – jednostkami bi-zespolonymi. Podajemy rozwiązania równania kwadratowego  $X^2 + pX + q = 0$  z niewiadomą bi-zespoloną  $X$  i bi-zespolonymi parametrami  $p, q$ .

### Appendix. Erratum to the paper:

L. N. Apostolova, S. Dimiev, P. Stoev, *Hyperbolic hypercomplex  $\bar{\partial}$ -operators, hyperbolic CR-equations, and harmonicity II, Fundamental solutions for hyperholomorphic operators and hyperbolic 4-real geometry*, Bull. Soc. Sci. Lettres Łódź Sér. Rech. Déform. **60** (2010), 61–72.

The first six lines on the page 65 have to be modified as follows

It is fulfilled  $dx_0 dx_1 dx_2 dx_3 = rsdrdsdt_1 dt_2$  and

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{\alpha}^{-1} &= (\tilde{\zeta} + \tilde{\eta}j_2)^{-1} = (r(\cosh t_1 + \sinh t_1 j_1) + s(\cosh t_2 + \sinh t_2 j_1)j_2)^{-1} = \\ &= \frac{x_0(x_0^2 - x_1^2 - x_2^2 - x_3^2) + 2x_1x_2x_3}{(x_0 + x_1 + x_2 + x_3)(x_0 - x_1 + x_2 - x_3)(x_0 + x_1 - x_2 - x_3)(x_0 - x_1 - x_2 + x_3)} + \\ &+ j_1 \frac{x_1(-x_0^2 + x_1^2 - x_2^2 - x_3^2) + 2x_0x_2x_3}{(x_0 + x_1 + x_2 + x_3)(x_0 - x_1 + x_2 - x_3)(x_0 + x_1 - x_2 - x_3)(x_0 - x_1 - x_2 + x_3)} + \\ &+ j_2 \frac{x_2(-x_0^2 - x_1^2 + x_2^2 - x_3^2) + 2x_0x_1x_3}{(x_0 + x_1 + x_2 + x_3)(x_0 - x_1 + x_2 - x_3)(x_0 + x_1 - x_2 - x_3)(x_0 - x_1 - x_2 + x_3)} + \\ &+ j_1 j_2 \frac{x_3(-x_0^2 - x_1^2 - x_2^2 + x_3^2) + 2x_0x_1x_2}{(x_0 + x_1 + x_2 + x_3)(x_0 - x_1 + x_2 - x_3)(x_0 + x_1 - x_2 - x_3)(x_0 - x_1 - x_2 + x_3)}. \end{aligned}$$

## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 87–90

*In memory of*  
*Academician Ljubomir Iliev (1913–2000)*

*Mariya I. Mitreva*

## ON THE INVERSION THEOREM OF WEI-LIANG CHOW

**Summary**

According to the famous theorem of Wei-Liang Chow (1949) each analytic subset of  $\mathbb{P}^m$  is a projective algebraic set. In the case of an analytic subset of  $\mathbb{C}^m$  there are different criteria in order for it to be algebraic. The present author proves three criteria in the opposite direction.

*Keywords and phrases:* compact complex analytic variety, complex projective space, projective algebraic set

**1.**

In connection with his famous theorem that each analytic subset of  $\mathbb{P}^m$  is a projective algebraic set, Wei-Liang Chow [6] (see also [2–5, 7, 8]) had proved seven different criteria, in terms of the behaviour at infinity, in order for it to be algebraic. Roughly speaking, every subvariety of a projective space is a projective variety. The present author proves three criteria in the opposite direction.

**2.**

Let  $z \in \mathbb{C}$ ,  $w = (w_0, w_1, \dots, w_m) \in \mathbb{C}^{m+1}$ . Consider the space  $\mathbb{P}^m$  of all classes of equivalence in terms of the relation

$$(w) = (w_0, w_1, \dots, w_m) = \left( \frac{w}{w_0} \right) = \left( \frac{w_1}{w_0}, \dots, \frac{w_m}{w_0} \right),$$

for  $w_0 \neq 0$ .  $\mathbb{P}^m$  is the complex projective space. We denote the elements of this space  $[w]$  ( $w \neq 0$ ) and the mapping, which translates a point  $w$  into  $\mathbb{P}^m$  denote

$$\pi : \mathbb{C}^{m+1} \setminus \{0\} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}^m;$$

$\pi$  is the mapping of projectivity [1].

Let also  $\tilde{w} = (w_1, w_2, \dots, w_m)$ , and  $\varphi$  be the mapping of transformation to local coordinates of the rule

$$\varphi : (z, [w]) \rightarrow (z, \tilde{w}),$$

which acts as the same  $\varphi : \mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{P}^m \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^m$ . Let also

$$H_0 = \{[w], w_0 \neq 0\}, \quad \text{and} \quad H^0 = \{[w], w_0 = 0\}.$$

Now we consider a pseudopolynomial of  $m$  variables, with coefficients  $a_i(z)$ ,  $i = 1, 2, \dots, n$ , which are analytic functions, depending of  $n$  variables:

$$P_q(z, \tilde{w}) = P_q(z_1, \dots, z_n, w_1, \dots, w_m) = a_0(z)\tilde{w}^q + a_1(z)\tilde{w}^{q-1} + \dots + a_{q-1}(z)\tilde{w} + a_q(z)$$

and we put

$$P_q^*(z, w) = P_q\left(z, \frac{\tilde{w}}{w_0}\right)w_0^q.$$

Correspondingly, let  $A$  be the set in  $\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^m$ , given by the equation  $P_q(z, \tilde{w}) = 0$  and  $A^*$  is the set in  $\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{P}^m$  with the condition  $P_q^*(z, w) = 0$ , i.e.

$$\begin{aligned} A &= \{(z, \tilde{w}) \in \mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^m, P_q(z, \tilde{w}) = 0\}, \\ A^* &= \{(z, w) \in \mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^{m+1}, P_q^*(z, w) = 0\} \\ &= \{(z, (w_0, \tilde{w})) \in \mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^{m+1}, P_q\left(z, \frac{\tilde{w}}{w_0}\right)w_0^q = 0\}. \end{aligned}$$

### 3.

We give here the next conclusion about the analytical sets  $A$  and  $A^*$

**Proposition 1.** *The set  $\varphi^{-1}A$  is analytical with respect to  $w$  in the set  $\mathbb{C}^n \times H_0$ .*

*Remark 1.* Here

$$\mathbb{C}^n \times H_0 = \mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{P}^m \setminus H^0,$$

means that

$$H_0 = \{[w] \in \mathbb{P}^m, w_0 \neq 0\},$$

and

$$H^0 = \{[w] \in \mathbb{P}^m, w_0 = 0\}.$$

Therefore we consider only such points, for which  $w_0 \neq 0$ .

*Remark 2.* The set  $A$  contains all the rays in  $\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^m$  for which  $w_0 \neq 0$  and

$$\frac{w_1}{w_0} = \frac{w_2}{w_0} = \dots = \frac{w_n}{w_0},$$

and the mapping  $\varphi$  acts from

$$\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^{m+1} \setminus \{w_0 = 0\} \quad \text{to} \quad \mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{P}^m \setminus H^0$$

(one ray by  $\varphi$  goes to one point).

Hence the map  $\varphi^{-1}A$  is a multivalued map and acts from  $\mathbb{P}^m \setminus H^0$ .

*Remark 3.* The definition of the mapping  $\varphi$  is in the sense of local coordinates.

*Proof of Proposition 1.* Because  $\varphi$  is the map of kind to passing to local coordinates of  $\varphi^{-1}A$ , it is an analytic set on the manifold. According to the definition of the analytic set on the manifold, the set  $\varphi^{-1}A$  is analytic:

$$A = \{(z, \tilde{w}), P_q(z, \tilde{w}) = 0\}.$$

4.

Moreover, we have

**Proposition 2.** *The same set  $\varphi^{-1}A$  is analytic in  $\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{P}^m$ .*

*Proof.* We can represent  $\varphi^{-1}A$  as given:

$$\varphi^{-1}A = A^* \cap \mathbb{C}^n \times H_0 = A^* \setminus (\mathbb{C}^n \times H^0).$$

Moreover,  $A^*$  is an analytic set in  $\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{P}^m$ , the set  $\mathbb{C}^n \times H^0$  is also analytic, and according to the properties of these sets the closure of the difference of two analytic sets is analytic set too [3, p. 46]

**Proposition 3.** *The projection  $\tilde{\pi} : (z, [w]) \rightarrow z$  of every analytic set  $\mathcal{L}$  in  $\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{P}^m$  is analytic again set in  $\mathbb{C}^n$ .*

*Proof.* It is evident that the mapping  $\tilde{\pi}^*$  is homeomorphic with the required property (as the space  $\mathbb{P}^m$ ). Then, using the Remmert's theorem about the property mappings [4] we conclude that  $\tilde{\pi}^* \mathcal{L}$  is compact. The proof is complete.

*Remark 4.* The map  $f : Y \rightarrow B$  is proper if for every compact  $K \subset B$  the set  $f^{-1}(K)$  is in corresponding connected component of  $Y$ .

## References

- [1] B.W. Shabat, *Introduction to Complex Analysis*. Parts I and II, (Translations of Mathematical Monographs 110), Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI 1992 (transl. from Russian); Nauka, Moskva 1985 (in Russian).
- [2] H. Cartan, Review of [6] (in French), MR0033093 (11, 389f), 1949.
- [3] E. M. Chirka, *Complex Analytic Sets*, in: E. M. Chirka, P. Dolbeault, A. G. Vitushkin, *Introduction to Complex Analysis*, Springer, Berlin-Heidelberg, New York 1997, pp. 117–158, esp. pp. 133–134 (transl. from Russian); Nauka, Moskva 1985 (in Russian).
- [4] R. Gunning and H. Rossi, *Analytic Functions of Several Complex Variables*, Prentice Hall, Englewood Cliffs, NJ 1965; Mir, Moskva 1969 (in Russian).

- [5] S.S.Chern, *Complex Manifolds without Potential Theory*, (Van Nostrand Mathematical Studies 15) Van Nostrand, Princeton, NJ 1967; GIFMZ, Moskva 1961 (in Russian).
- [6] W.-L. Chow, *On compact complex analytic varieties*, Amer. J. Math. **71** (1949), 893–914.
- [7] D. Mumford, *Algebraic geometry I. Complex Projective Varieties* (Grundlagen der mathematischen Wissenschaften 221), Springer, Berlin-Göttingen-Heidelberg 1976; Mir, Moskva 1979 (in Russian).
- [8] B. Malgrange, *Sur les fonctions différentiables et les ensembles analytiques*, Bull. Soc. Math. France **91** (1963), 113–127.

Department of Mathematics and Physics  
University of Forestry  
10 Kliment Ohridsky Blvd.  
BG-1756 Sofia, Bulgaria  
e-mail: mmitrevasofia@yahoo.com

Presented by Julian Ławrynowicz at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on December 16, 2013

## O ODWROTNYM TWIERDZENIU WEI-LIANG CHOWA

### S t r e s z c z e n i e

Zgodnie ze sławnym twierdzeniem Wei-Liang Chowa (1960) każdy podzbiór analityczny zespolonej przestrzeni rzutowej  $\mathbb{P}^m$  jest rzutowym zbiorem algebraicznym. W przypadku analitycznego podzbioru przestrzeni  $\mathbb{C}^m$  istnieją rozmaite kryteria na to, by był on algebraiczny. Obecna autorka dowodzi trzech kryteriów w odwrotnym kierunku.

## BULLETIN

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 91–100

*Gertruda Ivanova***REMARKS ON SOME MODIFICATION OF THE DARBOUX PROPERTY****Summary**

We say that a function  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  has  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property ( $f \in \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}-ap}$ ) if for each interval  $(a, b) \subset \mathbb{R}$  and for each  $\lambda$  between  $f(a)$  and  $f(b)$  there exists a point  $x_0 \in (a, b)$  such that  $f(x_0) = \lambda$  and  $f$  is  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous at  $x_0$ . Obviously, the family  $\mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}-ap}$  is situated between the class  $\mathcal{D}$  of Darboux functions and the class  $\mathcal{D}_s$  of functions with strong Świątkowski property. We prove that our family is essentially different from both these families and from the family introduced by Grande in [2], i.e. from the family of all functions  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  such that for each interval  $(a, b) \subset \mathbb{R}$  and for each  $\lambda$  between  $f(a)$  and  $f(b)$  there exists a point  $x_0 \in (a, b)$  for which  $f(x_0) = \lambda$  and  $f$  is approximately continuous at  $x_0$ .

*Keywords and phrases:* Darboux property, strong Świątkowski property, Baire property,  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximate continuity

Let  $\mathcal{D}$  denote the class of Darboux functions. Put

$$\langle a, b \rangle = (\min\{a, b\}, \max\{a, b\}).$$

A function  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  has the strong Świątkowski property [3] if for each interval  $(a, b) \subset \mathbb{R}$  and for each  $\lambda \in \langle f(a), f(b) \rangle$  there exists a point  $x_0 \in (a, b)$  such that  $f(x_0) = \lambda$  and  $f$  is continuous at  $x_0$ . We will use the symbol  $\mathcal{D}_s$  to denote the class of functions with strong Świątkowski property.

Z. Grande in 2009 [2] considered some modification of strong Świątkowski property changing the continuity with approximate continuity, i.e. a function  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  has ap-Darboux property if for each interval  $(a, b) \subset \mathbb{R}$  and for each  $\lambda \in \langle f(a), f(b) \rangle$  there exists a point  $x_0 \in (a, b)$  such that  $f(x_0) = \lambda$  and  $f$  is approximately continuous at  $x_0$ . A family of all functions with ap-Darboux property we will denote by  $\mathcal{D}_{ap}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{I}$  be a  $\sigma$ -ideal of sets of the first category. We introduce the analogous modification of strong Świątkowski property changing the continuity with  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximate continuity, it means with the continuity with respect to the  $\mathcal{I}$ -density topology in the domain (see [1, 4–7]).

*Definition 1.* We will say that a function  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  has  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property if for each interval  $(a, b) \subset \mathbb{R}$  and for each  $\lambda \in \langle f(a), f(b) \rangle$  there exists a point  $x_0 \in (a, b)$  such that  $f(x_0) = \lambda$  and  $f$  is  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous at  $x_0$ .

We will denote by  $\mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}\text{-ap}}$  a family of all functions with  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property.

Obviously if  $f$  has strong Świątkowski property then  $f$  has ap-Darboux property and  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property. It is easily seen that

$$\mathcal{D}_s \subset \mathcal{D}_{ap} \cap \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}\text{-ap}} \subset \mathcal{D}_{ap} \cup \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}\text{-ap}} \subset \mathcal{D}.$$

We will prove that all these inclusions are proper. For this purpose we need some auxiliary lemmas.

If  $A \subset \mathbb{R}$  then  $A'$  denote the complement of  $A$ . We will say that the sets of the form

$$\bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n, b_n) \quad \text{or} \quad \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} [a_n, b_n]$$

are right interval sets at zero if  $b_{n+1} < a_n < b_n$  for  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  and  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_n = 0$ .

**Lemma 1.** *Let  $A \subset \mathbb{R}$ . If for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  and for each interval  $(a, b) \subset [0, 1]$  with length equal to  $\frac{1}{n}$  there exists an open interval contained in  $nA' \cap [0, 1]$ , then 0 is not a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $A$ .*

*Proof.* Let  $\{n_m\}_{m \in \mathbb{N}}$  be an arbitrary increasing sequence of natural numbers. Since for each  $m \in \mathbb{N}$  and for each interval  $(a, b) \subset [0, 1]$  with length equal to  $\frac{1}{n_m}$  the set  $(n_m \cdot A') \cap [0, 1]$  contains some open interval, so for each  $k$  the set

$$(0, 1) \cap \bigcup_{m=k}^{\infty} (n_m \cdot A')$$

contains some open set which is dense in  $[0, 1]$ . Therefore

$$(0, 1) \cap \bigcap_{k=1}^{\infty} \bigcup_{m=k}^{\infty} (n_m \cdot A') = (0, 1) \cap \limsup_{m \rightarrow \infty} (n_m \cdot A')$$

contains a set which is residual in  $[0, 1]$ . Hence

$$(0, 1) \setminus \limsup_{m \rightarrow \infty} (n_m \cdot A') = \liminf_{m \rightarrow \infty} (n_m \cdot A) \cap (0, 1)$$

is a set of the first category. Using lemma 2.1.1. in [1] and from the arbitrariness of the sequence  $\{n_m\}_{m \in \mathbb{N}}$  we obtain that 0 is not a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $A$ .  $\square$

**Lemma 2.** *There exists a right interval set  $A$  at zero such that 0 is a right-hand density point of  $A$ , and 0 is not a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $A$ .*

*Proof.* Let

$$a_n = \frac{1}{n+2}, \quad b_n = \frac{1}{n+1} - \frac{1}{(n+1)^2(n+2)}$$

for  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ . Put

$$A = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n, b_n).$$

Observe that 0 is a right-hand density point of  $A$ . We have

$$\begin{aligned} d_+(A, 0) &= \liminf_{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{m(A \cap [0, h])}{h} = \liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{m(A \cap [0, \frac{1}{n}])}{\frac{1}{n}} \geq \\ &\geq \liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{(1 - \frac{1}{n}) m\left(\left[\frac{1}{n+1}, \frac{1}{n}\right]\right) + \left(1 - \frac{1}{n+1}\right) m\left(\left[\frac{1}{n+2}, \frac{1}{n+1}\right]\right) + \dots}{\frac{1}{n}} \geq \\ &\geq \liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\left(1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) m\left(\left[0, \frac{1}{n}\right]\right)}{\frac{1}{n}} = 1. \end{aligned}$$

Now we will prove that 0 is not a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $A$ . Observe that the length of the longest interval contained in  $(n+1) \cdot A \cap [0, 1]$  is equal to  $\frac{n}{(n+1)(n+2)}$ , so for each interval  $(a, b) \subset [0, 1]$  with length equal to  $\frac{1}{n+1}$  there exists an open interval contained in  $(n+1) \cdot A' \cap [0, 1]$ . Consequently, by Lemma 1, zero is not a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $A$ .  $\square$

**Theorem 3.** *There exists a function  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  such that  $f$  has ap-Darboux property and  $f$  has not  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property, i.e.  $f \in \mathcal{D}_{ap} \setminus \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}-ap}$ .*

*Proof.* Let  $\{a_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  and  $\{b_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  be the sequences defined in the previous lemma. Put

$$A_0 = (-\infty, 0] \cup \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n, b_n) \cup [b_1, \infty).$$

Clearly,  $d(A_0, 0) = 1$ . Let

$$f(x) = \begin{cases} 1-x & \text{for } x \leq 0, \\ 1 - \frac{1}{n} & \text{for } x \in [a_n, b_n], n \in \mathbb{N}, \\ 0 & \text{for } x = \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}, n \in \mathbb{N} \text{ and for } x \in [b_1, \infty), \\ \text{linear} & \text{on the intervals } \left[b_{n+1}, \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}\right], \left[\frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}, a_n\right], n \in \mathbb{N}. \end{cases}$$

Then

- (i)  $f$  is continuous at each point  $x \in \mathbb{R}$ ,  $x \neq 0$ ;
- (ii)  $f$  is approximately continuous at 0, because  $f \upharpoonright A_0$  is continuous at 0 and  $d(A_0, 0) = 1$ ;
- (iii)  $f$  has ap-Darboux property: for  $y \in [0, \infty) \setminus \{1\}$  function  $f$  has the strong Świątkowski property and for  $y = 1$  there exists a point  $x_0 = 0$  such that  $f(x_0) = f(0) = 1$  and  $f$  is approximately continuous at 0;
- (iv)  $f$  has not  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property,  $f \notin \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}\text{-ap}}$ , because  $f$  assumes value 1 only at the point 0 and  $f$  is not  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous at 0.

In order to prove the last property put  $C = \{x \in \mathbb{R} : f(x) > \frac{1}{4}\}$ . Obviously, for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  and for each interval  $(a, b) \subset [0, 1]$  with length equal to  $\frac{1}{n}$  there exists an open interval contained in  $n \cdot C' \cap [0, 1]$ . By Lemma 1 zero is not the  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $C$ . Simultaneously

$$f^{-1}\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}, \frac{3}{2}\right)\right) \subset C,$$

so  $f$  is not  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous at 0, because 0 is not the  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $f^{-1}\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}, \frac{3}{2}\right)\right)$ . Consequently,  $f^{-1}\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}, \frac{3}{2}\right)\right)$  is not open in the  $\mathcal{I}$ -density topology.  $\square$

**Lemma 4.** *There exists a right interval set  $B$  at zero such that 0 is a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $B$  and 0 is not a right-hand density point of  $B$ .*

*Proof.* In the construction we will use a symmetric Cantor-type set  $C$  contained in  $[0, 1]$  with positive measure  $\alpha \in (0, 1)$ , such that  $\inf C = 0$  and  $\sup C = 1$ .

Let  $G_1$  be a component interval of  $[0, 1] \setminus C$ , concentric with  $[0, 1]$ , which was removed in the first step of the construction. Let  $G_2$  denote the union of the component intervals of  $[0, 1] \setminus C$ , which were removed in the first and second steps. Let  $G_n$  be a union of the component intervals of  $[0, 1] \setminus C$ , which were removed in the steps  $1, \dots, n$ ,  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ .

Put

$$B = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{2^n} G_n + \frac{1}{2^n} \right).$$

Obviously  $B$  is a right interval set at zero.

Let us show that 0 is not a right-hand density point of  $B$ . For this purpose it suffices to show that  $d^+(B', 0) > 0$ . Indeed, for each  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  we have

$$m(G'_k \cap [0, 1]) > \alpha,$$

so

$$m\left(\frac{1}{2^k}(G'_k \cap [0, 1])\right) > \frac{1}{2^k} \cdot \alpha.$$

Hence

$$m\left(B' \cap \left[0, \frac{1}{2^n}\right]\right) = \sum_{k=n+1}^{\infty} m\left(\frac{1}{2^k}(G'_k \cap [0, 1]) + \frac{1}{2^k}\right) > \sum_{k=n+1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{2^k} \cdot \alpha = \frac{\alpha}{2^n},$$

it means  $d^+(B', 0) \geq \alpha > 0$ .

Now we will prove that 0 is a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $B$ . From Theorem 2.2.2, (iii) in [1] it is sufficient to show that for each increasing sequence  $\{t_k\}_{k \in \mathbb{N}}$  of positive numbers tending to infinity there exists a subsequence  $\{t_{k_p}\}_{p \in \mathbb{N}}$  such that the set

$$\liminf_{p \rightarrow \infty} (t_{k_p} \cdot B) \cap (0, 1) = \bigcup_{m=1}^{\infty} \bigcap_{p=m}^{\infty} (t_{k_p} \cdot B) \cap (0, 1)$$

is residual in  $[0, 1]$ .

So let  $\{t_k\}_{k \in \mathbb{N}}$  be an increasing sequence of positive numbers tending to infinity. We can assume that  $t_1 > 1$ .

For  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  put

$$(1) \quad h_k = \frac{1}{t_k}.$$

Hence for each  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  there exists exactly one number  $n_k \in \mathbb{N}$  such that

$$h_k \in \left[ \frac{1}{2^{n_k+1}}, \frac{1}{2^{n_k}} \right).$$

So for  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  we have

$$1 \leq h_k \cdot 2^{n_k+1} < 2.$$

Let  $\{h_{k_p} \cdot 2^{n_{k_p}+1}\}_{p \in \mathbb{N}}$  be a convergent subsequence,

$$h_{k_p} \cdot 2^{n_{k_p}+1} \xrightarrow{p \rightarrow \infty} g.$$

Obviously  $g \in [1, 2]$ ,

$$(2) \quad \frac{1}{h_{k_p} \cdot 2^{n_{k_p}}} \xrightarrow{p \rightarrow \infty} \frac{2}{g}$$

and  $\frac{2}{g} \in [1, 2]$ .

Put

$$G = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} G_n$$

and

$$B_0 = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{2^n} G + \frac{1}{2^n} \right).$$

Evidently  $G$  is open and dense in  $[0, 1]$ , so  $B_0$  is open and dense in  $[0, 1]$ , too.

Now we will prove that

$$(3) \quad \liminf_{p \rightarrow \infty} (t_{k_p} \cdot B) \cap (0, 1) = \bigcup_{m=1}^{\infty} \bigcap_{p=m}^{\infty} (t_{k_p} \cdot B) \cap (0, 1) = \bigcup_{m=1}^{\infty} \bigcap_{p=m}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{h_{k_p}} \cdot B \right) \cap (0, 1) \supset \left( \frac{2}{g} \cdot B_0 \right) \cap (0, 1).$$

Let  $x \in \left( \frac{2}{g} \cdot B_0 \right) \cap (0, 1)$ . Since  $B_0$  is open, so  $x$  belongs to some component of the set  $\left( \frac{2}{g} \cdot B_0 \right) \cap (0, 1)$ .

We have

$$B_0 = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( \left( \frac{1}{2^n} \cdot \bigcup_{k=1}^{\infty} G_k \right) + \frac{1}{2^n} \right),$$

Therefore there exists a natural number  $n_0$  such that

$$x \in \frac{2}{g} \left( \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} \cdot G + \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} \right),$$

so there exist two natural numbers  $n_0$  and  $m_0$  such that

$$(4) \quad x \in \frac{2}{g} \left( \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} \cdot G_{m_0} + \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} \right).$$

Let  $n_{k_p} \geq m_0$ . Then for  $m = n_{k_p} + n_0$  we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \left( \frac{1}{h_{k_p}} \cdot B \right) \cap (0, 1) = \left( \frac{2^{n_{k_p}}}{h_{k_p} \cdot 2^{n_{k_p}}} \cdot B \right) \cap (0, 1) \\ &= \frac{1}{h_{k_p} \cdot 2^{n_{k_p}}} \cdot \bigcup_{m=n_{k_p}+1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{2^{n_{k_p}}}{2^m} G_m + \frac{2^{n_{k_p}}}{2^m} \right) \\ &= \frac{1}{h_{k_p} \cdot 2^{n_{k_p}}} \cdot \bigcup_{m=n_{k_p}+1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{2^{m-n_{k_p}}} G_m + \frac{1}{2^{m-n_{k_p}}} \right) \\ &\supset \frac{1}{h_{k_p} \cdot 2^{n_{k_p}}} \cdot \left( \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} G_{m_0} + \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} \right). \end{aligned}$$

Using (2) we obtain

$$\frac{1}{h_{k_p} \cdot 2^{n_{k_p}}} \cdot \left( \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} G_{m_0} + \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} \right) \xrightarrow{p \rightarrow \infty} \frac{2}{g} \left( \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} G_{m_0} + \frac{1}{2^{n_0}} \right).$$

Hence and from (1) and (4) it follows that for each sufficiently big  $p$

$$x \in (t_{k_p} \cdot B) \cap (0, 1).$$

Therefore

$$x \in \bigcup_{m=1}^{\infty} \bigcap_{p=m}^{\infty} (t_{k_p} \cdot B) \cap (0, 1),$$

which gives (3). As  $B_0$  is open and dense in  $[0, 1]$  and  $\frac{2}{g} \geq 1$ , so  $\left(\frac{2}{g} \cdot B_0\right) \cap (0, 1)$  is also open and dense in  $[0, 1]$ , so it is residual in  $[0, 1]$ . Using (3) we obtain that  $\liminf_{p \rightarrow \infty} (t_{k_p} \cdot B) \cap (0, 1)$  is residual in the interval  $[0, 1]$ . Consequently, 0 is a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $B$ .  $\square$

**Theorem 5.** *There exists a function  $g : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  such that  $g$  has  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property and  $g$  has not ap-Darboux property, i.e.  $g \in \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}\text{-ap}} \setminus \mathcal{D}_{\text{ap}}$ .*

*Proof.* Analogously as in Theorem 3 we can construct a function  $g$  using the set  $B$  from Lemma 4. For this purpose consider a set

$$B_1 = (-\infty, 0] \cup B \cup [b_1, \infty) = (-\infty, 0] \cup \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n, b_n) \cup [b_1, \infty),$$

where  $a_n$  and  $b_n$  are the ends of the component intervals of  $B$  (defined in the previous lemma) such that  $0 < \dots < a_n < b_n < a_{n-1} < b_{n-1} < \dots < a_1 < b_1$ .

Put

$$g(x) = \begin{cases} 1 - x & \text{for } x \leq 0, \\ 1 - \frac{1}{n} & \text{for } x \in (a_n, b_n), n \in \mathbb{N}, \\ 0 & \text{for } x = \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}, n \in \mathbb{N} \text{ and for } x \in [b_1, \infty), \\ \text{linear} & \text{on the intervals } \left[ b_{n+1}, \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2} \right], \left[ \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}, a_n \right], n \in \mathbb{N}. \end{cases}$$

Then

- (i)  $g$  is continuous at each point  $x \in \mathbb{R}$ ,  $x \neq 0$ ;
- (ii)  $g$  is  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous at 0, because  $g \upharpoonright B_1$  is continuous at 0 and 0 is the  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $B_1$ ;
- (iii)  $g$  has  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property: for  $y \in [0, \infty) \setminus \{1\}$  function  $g$  has the strong Świątkowski property and for  $y = 1$  we have a point  $x_0 = 0$  such that  $g(x_0) = g(0) = 1$  and  $g$  is  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous at  $x_0$ .
- (iv)  $g$  has not ap-Darboux property, because  $g$  assumes value 1 only at the point 0 and  $g$  is not approximately continuous at zero.

To prove the last property put  $C = \{x \in \mathbb{R} : f(x) < \frac{3}{4}\}$ . Obviously,

$$C \supset \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( b_{n+1} + \frac{a_n - b_{n+1}}{4}, a_n - \frac{a_n - b_{n+1}}{4} \right),$$

and

$$B' \cap (0, b_1) = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} [b_{n+1}, a_n].$$

So

$$m \left( C \cap \left[ 0, \frac{1}{2^n} \right] \right) \geq \frac{1}{2} m \left( B' \cap \left[ 0, \frac{1}{2^n} \right] \right) > \frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{\alpha}{2^n}.$$

Hence  $d^+(C, 0) \geq \frac{\alpha}{2} > 0$ .

Consequently, 0 is not the density point of the set  $g^{-1} \left( \left( \frac{3}{4}, \frac{5}{4} \right) \right)$  and  $g$  is not approximately continuous at 0.  $\square$

**Lemma 6.** *There exists a right interval set  $E_0$  such that 0 is a right-hand dispersion and  $\mathcal{I}$ -dispersion point of  $E_0$ .*

*Proof.* For  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  put

$$(5) \quad c_n = \frac{n+1}{(n+2)!}, d_n = \frac{1}{(n+1)!}$$

and let

$$E_0 = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} [c_n, d_n].$$

Then

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{d_n - c_n}{c_n} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\frac{1}{(n+1)!} - \frac{n+1}{(n+2)!}}{\frac{n+1}{(n+2)!}} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\frac{1}{(n+2)!}}{\frac{n+1}{(n+2)!}} = 0$$

and

$$\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{d_{n+1}}{c_n} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\frac{1}{(n+2)!}}{\frac{n+1}{(n+2)!}} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n+1} = 0 \in [0, 1).$$

By Lemma 2.1.4 and Theorem 2.2.2, (iii) in [1] it follows that 0 is a right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -dispersion of  $E_0$ .

Simultaneously,

$$\begin{aligned} \limsup_{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{m(E_0 \cap [0, h])}{h} &= \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{m(E_0 \cap [0, d_n])}{d_n} \\ &\leq \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{(d_n - c_n) + d_{n+1}}{d_n} \\ &= \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\frac{2}{(n+2)!}}{\frac{1}{(n+1)!}} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{2}{n+2} = 0, \end{aligned}$$

so  $d^+(E_0, 0) = 0$ . □

**Theorem 7.** *There exists a function  $h : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  such that  $h$  has  $ap$ -Darboux and  $\mathcal{I}$ - $ap$ -Darboux properties, but it has not the strong Świątkowski property, i.e.*

$$h \in (\mathcal{D}_{ap} \cap \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}-ap}) \setminus \mathcal{D}_s.$$

*Proof.* For our purpose we will use the set  $E_0$  from the previous lemma. Let

$$(6) \quad a_n = \frac{1}{(n+2)!}, b_n = \frac{n+1}{(n+2)!}$$

for  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  and

$$E = (-\infty, 0] \cup \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n, b_n) \cup [b_1, \infty).$$

Clearly,

$$\bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n, b_n) = \left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right) \setminus E_0,$$

where  $E_0$  is a set from the last lemma, so 0 is the density and  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $E$ .

Put

$$h(x) = \begin{cases} 1 - x & \text{for } x \leq 0, \\ 1 - \frac{1}{n} & \text{for } x \in (a_n, b_n), n \in \mathbb{N}, \\ 0 & \text{for } x = \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}, n \in \mathbb{N}, \text{ and for } x \in [b_1, \infty), \\ \text{linear} & \text{on the intervals } \left[ b_{n+1}, \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2} \right], \left[ \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}, a_n \right], n \in \mathbb{N}. \end{cases}$$

Then

- (i)  $h$  is continuous at each point  $x \in \mathbb{R}, x \neq 0$ ;
- (ii)  $h$  is not continuous at 0 and assumes value 1 only at this point, hence  $h$  has not the strong Świątkowski property;
- (iii)  $h$  is approximately continuous at 0, because  $h \upharpoonright E$  is continuous at 0 and  $d(E, 0) = 1$ ;
- (iv)  $h$  has ap-Darboux property: for  $y \in [0, \infty) \setminus \{1\}$  function  $h$  has the strong Świątkowski property and for  $y = 1$  there exists a point  $x_0 = 0$  such that  $h(x_0) = h(0) = 1$  and  $h$  is approximately continuous at  $x_0$ ;
- (v)  $h$  is  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous at 0, because  $h \upharpoonright E$  is continuous at 0 and 0 is the  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of  $E$ ;
- (vi)  $h$  has  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property (the proof is analogous as in 4).  $\square$

**Theorem 8.** *There exists a Darboux function  $s : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  such that  $s$  has neither ap-Darboux property nor  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property, i.e.  $s \in \mathcal{D} \setminus (\mathcal{D}_{ap} \cup \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}-ap})$ .*

*Proof.* We can construct a function using the set  $E$  described in the previous theorem.

Put

$$s(x) = \begin{cases} 1 - x & \text{for } x \leq 0, \\ 0 & \text{for } x \in [a_n, b_n], n \in \mathbb{N}, n \in \mathbb{N} \text{ and for } x \in [b_1, +\infty), \\ 1 - \frac{1}{n} & \text{for } x = \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}, \\ \text{linear} & \text{on the intervals } \left[ b_{n+1}, \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2} \right], \left[ \frac{a_n + b_{n+1}}{2}, a_n \right], n \in \mathbb{N}, \end{cases}$$

where  $\{a_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  and  $\{b_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  are the sequences defined in (6).

Then

- (i)  $s$  is continuous at each point  $x \in \mathbb{R}, x \neq 0$ ;
- (ii)  $s$  has Darboux property;

- (iii)  $s$  is not approximately continuous at zero, because  $d^+ \left( \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n, b_n), 0 \right) = 1$ ;
- (iv)  $s$  has not ap-Darboux property, because it assumes value 1 only at the point 0 and  $s$  is not approximately continuous at 0;
- (v)  $s$  is not  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous at 0, because 0 is the right-hand  $\mathcal{I}$ -density point of the set  $\bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n, b_n)$ ;
- (vi)  $s$  has not  $\mathcal{I}$ -ap-Darboux property (analogously as in 4). □

## References

- [1] K. Ciesielski, L. Larson, and K. Ostaszewski, *I-Density Continuous Functions*, Memoirs of the American Mathematical Society, Providence, Rhode Island, **515** (1994).
- [2] Z. Grande, *On a subclass of the family of Darboux functions*, Colloq. Math. **117**, no. 1 (2009), 95–104.
- [3] A. Maliszewski, *On the limits of strong Świątkowski functions*, Zeszyty Nauk. Politech. Łódź. Mat. **27**, no. 719 (1995), 87–93.
- [4] W. Poreda, E. Wagner-Bojakowska, and W. Wilczyński, *A category analogue of the density topology*, Fund. Math. **125** (1985), 167–173.
- [5] W. Poreda, E. Wagner-Bojakowska, and W. Wilczyński, *Remarks on  $\mathcal{I}$ -density and  $\mathcal{I}$ -approximately continuous functions*, Comm. Math. Univ. Carolina **26**, no. 3 (1985), 553–563.
- [6] W. Wilczyński, *A generalization of the density topology*, Real Anal. Exchange **8**, no. 1 (1982–83), 16–20.
- [7] W. Wilczyński, *A category analogue of the density topology, approximate continuity and the approximate derivative*, Real Anal. Exchange **10** (1984–85), 241–265.

Faculty of Mathematics and Computer Science  
 Łódź University  
 Stefana Banacha 22, PL-90-238 Łódź, Poland  
 e-mail: gertruda@math.uni.lodz.pl

Presented by Zbigniew Jakubowski at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on February 7, 2013

## UWAGI O PEWNEJ MODYFIKACJI WŁASNOŚCI DARBOUX

### Streszczenie

Mówimy, że funkcja  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  ma  $\mathcal{I}$ -własność Darboux ( $f \in \mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}-ap}$ ), jeśli dla każdego przedziału  $(a, b) \subset \mathbb{R}$  i każdej liczby  $\lambda \in \langle f(a), f(b) \rangle$  istnieje punkt  $x_0 \in (a, b)$  taki, że  $f(x_0) = \lambda$  i  $f$  jest  $\mathcal{I}$ -aprosymatywnie ciągła w punkcie  $x_0$ . Oczywiście, rodzina  $\mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}-ap}$  znajduje się pomiędzy rodziną  $\mathcal{D}$  funkcji o własności Darboux i rodziną  $\mathcal{D}_s$  funkcji o silnej własności Świątkowskiego. Pokazaliśmy, że rodzina  $\mathcal{D}_{\mathcal{I}-ap}$  istotnie różni się od rodziny wprowadzonej przez Grande w [2], tzn. od rodziny wszystkich funkcji  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  takich, że dla każdego przedziału  $(a, b) \subset \mathbb{R}$  i każdej liczby  $\lambda \in \langle f(a), f(b) \rangle$  istnieje punkt  $x_0 \in (a, b)$  taki, że  $f(x_0) = \lambda$  i  $f$  jest  $\mathcal{I}$ -aprosymatywnie ciągła w punkcie  $x_0$ .

## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 101–107

*Stanislaw Bednarek***BASIC OPTICAL ILLUSIONS CAUSED BY MOTION****Summary**

The basic optical illusions as: stroboscopic effect, bird in a cage phenomenon, effect of circulating pendulum, permanence of vision effect, waterfall effect, depth of seeing phenomenon and Benhams effect are described and its examples are given. The mentioned illusions are also explained and experimental method its demonstration are presented. Occurrence and significance this illusions in every day life and modern technology are also discussed.

*Keywords and phrases:* optical illusion, stroboscopic effect, waterfall effect, Benhams effect

**1. Introduction**

Sight is one of the five senses that a human possesses, apart from hearing, smell, taste and touch. Undoubtedly, it is one of the most significant senses when it comes to the amount of the transferred data. It is estimated that 90% of information is perceived through sight. This sense presents an adaptability skill in a broad range to different conditions. Thanks to this, correct perception of things at e.g. various lightning and distance is possible.

However in some cases, the sense of sight may cause the perceived sensations to distort, and then we experience optical illusions. One of the factors causing optical illusions is motion. Aim of this article is to present optical illusions caused by motion. It turns out that these illusions play an important role in everyday life, while watching movies or playing computer games.

## 2. Stroboscopic effect

Image created by a light stimulus on an eyes retina does not fade out right after this stimulus stops working. Extinction of the image that emerged takes place after a period of several hundredths of a second to one tenth of a second after the stimulus has faded out. This fact, often called “persistence of eye”, has mutual effects on the vision process [1]. The first one includes causing a sense of motion while watching images that come after each other quickly, presenting subsequent positions of a given item.

In order to realize this fact, we will conduct an experiment using Fig. 1. We can see here the subsequent positions of a simple pendulum that vibrates. How about copying this picture and cutting it into eight parts. Lets put these parts on each other – according to the given numbers – and staple, putting the stitch on the left side, on the marked spots. In this way, we have a small book comprising eight pages.

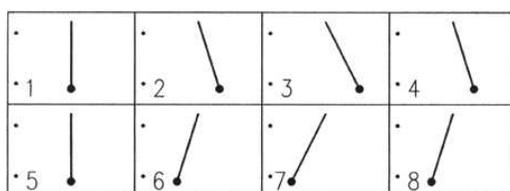


Fig. 1: Subsequent phases of a simple pendulum motion.

We hold the backbone in fingers of the left hand, and we leaf it through with fingers of the right hand. Looking at the pages of the book being leafed through, we experience an illusion that the pendulum vibrates. Our eye perceive the images of pendulums positions quickly coming after each other as a one picture of a moving pendulum. The observed effected has been used to project moving images in the cinema, TV and games. In order to provide the continuity of motion, the cinema usually uses the projection of 24 frames per second, and TV 50 frames or more.

The second type of the persistence of the eye effects can be noticed while illuminating the moving objects with short, periodical, bursts of lights. It includes causing a sensation of an item immovability when frequency of the bursts equals with or is an integral multiple of the items motion frequency. We can spot this effect by waving a hand quickly, in front of a TV or computer screen. When we wave at a frequency which is a multiplication of the projected image frequency, we will be able to see a multiplied, motionless image of the hand. This effect allows to establish the frequency of an item motion, e.g. of a rotating or vibrating part of machine, based on the frequency of the bursts of light.

A TV set or computer screen can be also used as an stroboscopic illuminator in a school physics lab or at home. During some experiments, it allows to watch motionless or slowed down images of the observed phenomenon, e.g. falling bodies

or wave motion. The way of observing the falling drops is presented in Fig. 2. The speed of the creation of drops is regulated by a degree of opening a tap 2, being located at the output of the vessel with liquid. Time of burst illuminating the drops can be changed through increasing or decreasing the width of a gap between two sheets of black paper 5, hiding a screen.

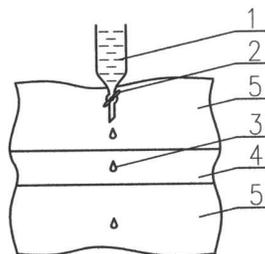


Fig. 2: A system for drops falling observations, in stroboscopic lightning; 1 – a vessel with liquid, 2 – tap, 3 – drop, 4 – TV or computer screen, 5 – black paper.

### 3. A bird in a cage

This illusion consist in the fact that two images, quickly presented after each other, are perceived as a single picture. In order to find it out, lets copy the Fig. 3 and cut out the rectangle with the obtained images inside. This rectangle should be folded in half along the dashed line, and the open side should be taped with a transparent tape. The end of a pencil, with the images taped to it with the same tape, is put in the folded images. In this way we obtained an item resembling a lollipop [2].

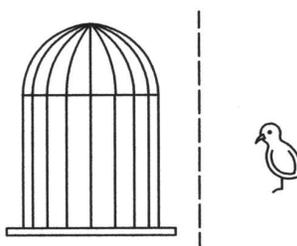


Fig. 3: Images for a bird in a cage observations.

Now, the free end of the pencil should be placed between hands, and the item should be propelled by moving hands one after another, in a way that makes it present a quick circular motion. While looking at the images, it will be noticed that the bird is inside the cage. Actually, it is an illusion caused by a short time interval, when the images of the cage and the bird are demonstrated. Because of that, the

eyes are not able to differentiate these pictures, and as a result we see the bird in the cage, not realizing that it is a mix of two images.

#### 4. Effect of a circulating pendulum

This effect can be easily checked in an experiment as well. We should prepare a pendulum, similar to a simple one, through attaching a modeling paste ball to a piece of thread. After hanging this pendulum and deviating it from the perpendicular direction, we can find out that it vibrates in one plane, which vanishes slowly. Therefore, this phenomena takes place according to our assumptions. Lets prepare glasses with one glass that is strongly dimmed. Such sunglasses can be easily obtained by taking one glass from sunglasses. Again, lets deviate the pendulum from the perpendicular direction and look at it through the prepared glasses.

This time, we will notice that while vibrating, the pendulum gets closer and moves away, making circles. Therefore, the pendulums motion seems to be a three-dimensional motion. However, it is just an illusion, because when we take off the glasses we see that the pendulum still vibrates in one plane. The observed illusion is cause by different times of perceiving dark and bright pendulum image by the eyes. Each eye receives different images of the pendulum – one receives a dark and the second one a bright picture. It turns out that the dark image is perceived slightly later than the bright one. These two images mix up in the sight center inside brain, which gives a sensation of three-dimensional motion. The described illusion is also called a Schwarzschild effect and is sometimes used in some cinemas for a three-dimensional visualization of an image through special glasses.

#### 5. The permanence of vision

A plastic pipe of 2–3 cm dimension and 25–30 cm length will be necessary for the next experiment – presenting an optical illusion caused by motion. It may be a pipe from plastic or metal. Such a pipe can also be easily made by covering an item, e.g. a handle of a brush, of the given dimension with a sheet of paper, and gluing its edges. When the glue became and the paper is taken off the handle, the pipe is ready. One of the pipes ends needs to be closed with a non-transparent disk with a gap, showed in Fig. 4. Such a disk can be also successfully cut out of a sheet of paper. The teeth, which are visible on a disks edge, should be folded and glued to the pipe.

Now, we should apply the open end of the pipe to one eye and close the second eye. Through the gap, we can see just an oblong part of the surroundings in front of us. This part is limited by the gaps edges. However, if we start to move the pipe quickly with fingers, we will notice a part of surroundings limited by a round edge of the pipe, as there was no disk at all. This illusion is caused by the fact that subsequent images limited by the gap are present on retina, which gives a sensation of one image limited by the pipes edge.

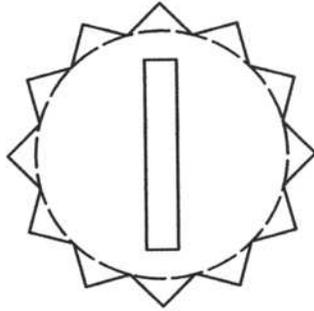


Fig. 4: A disk with a gap for permanence of seeing examination.

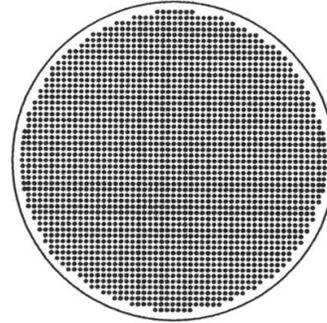


Fig. 5: A net of dots for waterfall effect observation.

## 6. Waterfall effect

In order to see this effect, we make a copy of a net of dots presented in Fig. 5. Then we cut the copied disk out of a piece of paper. We will have to make it rotate at a speed of about 1–2 rotations per second. Then, let's have a look at the unfolded fingers of a hand. We will notice that they seem to twist in a direction opposite to this of the disk. This is a waterfall effect, because it is similar to the phenomenon that takes place when a person stares at falling water, with rocks in the background. If at some point we take a look at the rocks surrounding the waterfall, we will have a sensation that they move upwards. It is worth noticing that if the speed of the disk rotation is too high, the dots will create circles, and we will not spot the described effect. In order to explain this effect, we should take into account the mutual interaction of the eyes and sight centers inside the brain. It is assumed that certain parts of the cortex are stimulated when eyes follow the e.g. right motion. Whereas other parts are activated when the eyes look at the e.g. left motion. If an item is motionless, or two objects move in opposite direction at the same speed, the stimulation level of both centers is the same, and we do not experience the sensation of motion. If then, we have a look on a motionless object, the centers that are stimulated faster will present a shorter time of stimulation vanishing than the centers stimulated slower. As a result, we have a sensation of rotation in opposite direction.

## 7. The depth of seeing

In order to see this effect, we also copy the object in Fig. 7, and we prepare a disk, which is rotated in a way described in the case of waterfall effect. Looking at the surface of the rotating disk, we can spot colorful strips in a shape of an arc. This effect is explained in the following way. There are three kinds of photoreceptor cells sensitive to red, green and blue color. Eyes and the brain record the white color

only when they are stimulated by light in a way that all kinds of photoreceptor cells show the similar response times. White arc move at different speed on the rotating disk – the greater the speed, the greater their distance from the center of the disk. Length of the arcs are also different. As a result, times of response to stimulation and its vanishing for particular kinds of photoreceptor cells are different, and the arcs seems to be colored. It is worth adding that the described effect was discovered in 19th century by Benham – producer of toys, who spotted colorful arcs on a surface of a spinning top, painted in black and white stripes.

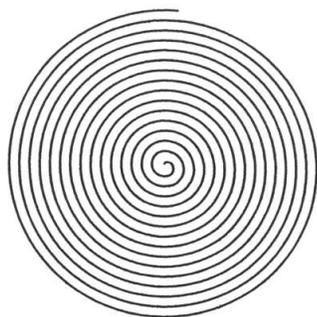


Fig. 6: A spiral for depth of seeing presentation.

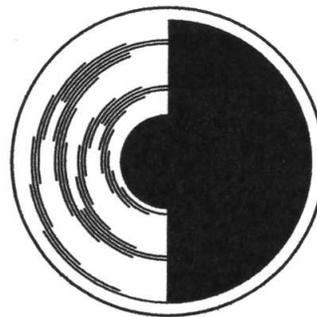


Fig. 7: A figure for Benhams effect observations.

## References

- [1] Sz. Szczeniowski, *Experimental Physics*, part IV, Optics, PWN, Warsaw 1963 (in Polish).
- [2] M. Di Spizo, *Visual Foolery*, Addison-Wesley Publishing Company Inc., New York 1995.
- [3] P. Creen, *Seeing is believing*, Amazing Brain Games Series, Andromeda Oxford, Abingdom 1996.

Chair of Modelling the Teaching and Learning Processes  
 University of Łódź  
 Pomorska 149/153, PL-90-236 Łódź  
 Poland  
 e-mail: bedastan@uni.lodz.pl

Presented by Leszek Wojtczak at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on July 5, 2012

## **PODSTAWOWE ZŁUDZENIA OPTYCZNE SPOWODOWANE RUCHEM**

### **S t r e s z c z e n i e**

W artykule opisane zostały podstawowe złudzenia optyczne spowodowane ruchem, takie jak: efekt stroboskopowy, zjawisko ptaka w klatce, efekt krążącego wahadła, trwałość widzenia, efekt wodospadu, głębokość widzenia oraz dysk Benhams. Wspomniane złudzenia zostały również wyjaśnione i podano sposoby przeprowadzenia demonstrujących je doświadczeń. Omówiono także występowanie i znaczenie tych złudzeń w życiu codziennym oraz we współczesnej technice.



## B U L L E T I N

DE LA SOCIÉTÉ DES SCIENCES ET DES LETTRES DE ŁÓDŹ

2013

Vol. LXIII

Recherches sur les déformations

no. 3

pp. 109–116

*Romuald Brzozowski, Ewelina Z. Frątczak, Małgorzata Antoszevska-Moneta,  
Tomasz Gwizdalla, Bogdan Pawłowski, Józef Balcerski, Kazimierz Dolecki,  
and Marek Moneta*

**PHASE TRANSFORMATIONS OF VP800 SURFACE BY IMPACT OF SLOW HEAVY ION ANALYZED WITH CEMS****Summary**

Structural transformation of amorphous material surface is related to energy thresholds, either in the potential energy, 10 keV deposited by Highly Charged Ion (HCI) or with the threshold in electronic energy loss, 5 keV/nm transferred by Swift Heavy Ion (SHI). In this work, in order to look for structural and magnetic transformations, thin foils of amorphous alloy  $\text{Fe}_{73}\text{Si}_{16}\text{B}_7\text{Cu}_1\text{Nb}_3$  (VP800) were irradiated with slow heavy ions (200 keV Ar and N) at doses  $10^{10}$  and  $10^{11}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup>. With the use of *ex-situ* Mössbauer spectroscopy (CEMS) Fe and Fe(Si) clusters accompanied by Fe<sub>3</sub>Si nano-crystals were found in the samples irradiated at lower ion doses, whereas rather amorphous structures can be spotted in samples more heavily implanted ions.

*Keywords and phrases:* crystallization, phase transformations, Mössbauer spectroscopy, heavy ions

**1. Introduction**

Amorphous alloys can crystallize partially, if an appropriate amount of energy is supplied [1–3]. Recently, crystallization induced by 5 GeV Pb ions at low fluency in amorphous alloys which exhibit two steps thermal crystallization (like Finemet) was reported [4], against absence of the effect in alloys suffering only a single step thermal crystallization. In this case only secondary (without primary) crystallization phase was observed, probably in some correlation with absence of Cu. Crystallites of 1–4 nm size were formed around amorphous ion track of 6–8 nm in diameter, thus a single ion converts material from initially amorphous to other amorphous and crystalline structures roughly within 100 nm<sup>2</sup> area [4].

During slowing down of a SHI or impact of a HCI its energy is faster deposited to the material through electronic excitations ( $10^{-15}$  s), than subsequently transferred to the lattice through electron-phonon coupling ( $10^{-13}$  s) [5–6]. This can locally cause rapid heat-cooling pulse, with the peak temperature of thousands of K.

We look for a similar phase transformation induced in surface of amorphous alloy by impact of slow heavy ion [7].

## 2. Experimental setup

The samples used in this study were 20  $\mu\text{m}$  thick, amorphous ribbons prepared by a rapid cooling ( $10^7$  K/s) with the melt-spinning technique. It was checked with X-ray diffraction (XRD) and with transmission Mössbauer spectroscopy (TMS) that initially the foils were amorphous (with small addition of nano-crystals of  $\text{Fe}_3\text{Si}$ ) and with differential scanning calorimetry (DSC) that they exhibit two step crystallization [2–3]. The irradiation with Ar and N ions were performed at normal incidence under a controlled ion flux lower than  $10^9$  ions/ $\text{cm}^2/\text{s}$  with Cockroft-Walton type accelerator working effectively in the voltage range from 50 to 300 kV. It is capable to provide on the sample ion beam current density from 1 nA/ $\text{cm}^2$  up to 1  $\mu\text{A}/\text{cm}^2$ , measured by the Faraday cup. In VP800 alloy Ar ions have a rate of energy deposition into electronic and nuclear processes of  $\text{Se}\sim\text{Sn}\sim 778$  eV/nm [8], in a very short time scale of  $10^{-13}$  s, required to stop the ion.

MS experiments were performed in the constant acceleration mode with  $^{57}\text{Co}$ :Rh (6.3 keV X-rays and 14.4 keV  $\gamma$ -rays calibration lines) source of 50 mCi activity. CEMS was based on detection of 7.3 keV Fe conversion  $e^-$ , penetrating roughly 200 nm surface layer by LEK-2 He+5%  $\text{CH}_4$  gas flow detector at room temperature. The CEMS data acquisition was based on MOSIEK analyzer and for signal processing the CAMAC system combined with Tukan 8k analyzer was used. Spectra were analyzed with RECOIL [9].

The 20  $\mu\text{m}$  thick  $\text{Fe}_{73}\text{Si}_{16}\text{B}_7\text{Cu}_1\text{Nb}_3$  foils after surface cleaning with Ar ion sputtering were transferred through the air to the reaction chamber of  $10^{-6}$  hPa, fixed on  $\text{LN}_2$  cryostat and irradiated at low current of 1 nA/ $\text{cm}^2$  with 200 keV Ar ions at the fluency  $10^{10}$  and  $10^{11}$  Ar/ $\text{cm}^2$ . Subsequently, the foils were again transferred through the air to the CEMS reaction chamber of  $10^{-9}$  hPa for the *ex-situ* Mössbauer analysis.

In this work are presented results for Ar incident beam at 200 keV energy and simulations from SRIM for bought Ar and N for 200 keV.

## 3. Results of SRIM calculations

The plot in Fig. 1 shows the final distribution of the ions in the target calculated by STRIM [7]. The average ion ranges in VP800 are about 100 nm for Ar ions and 230 nm for N ions.

The final distribution of the recoils atoms of Fe, Si and B from the VP800 target structure are presented in Fig. 2. This plot is updated after each ion. For Ar 200 keV ions the distribution has maximum at about 70 nm for each recoiled atoms. For N 200 ions the maximum are shifted to 200 nm for the same incident energy of ions. Also the shape of distribution is much different.

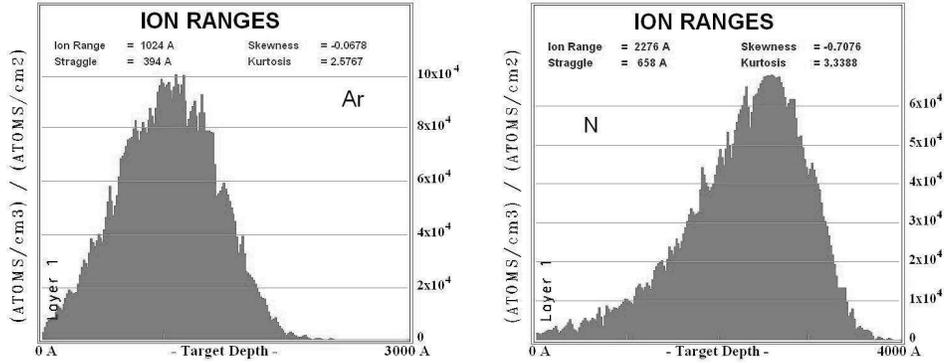


Fig. 1: Depth distribution of energy absorbed from 200 keV Ar and N ions by atoms in  $\text{Fe}_{73}\text{Si}_{16}\text{B}_7\text{Cu}_1\text{Nb}_3$  amorphous alloy.

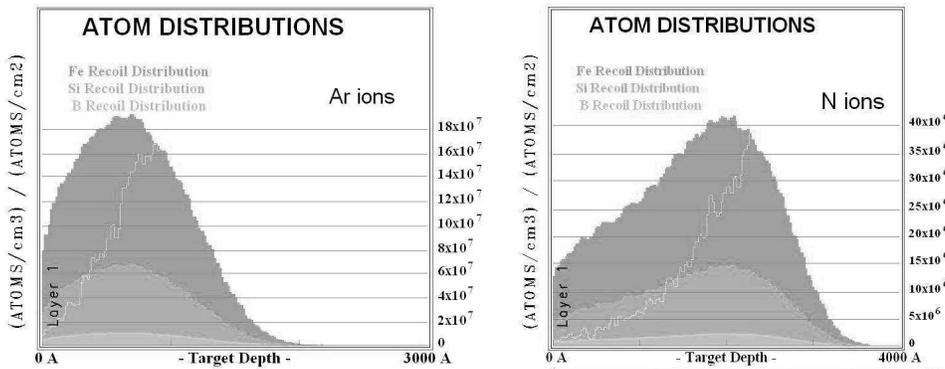


Fig. 2: The distribution of the recoils atoms of Fe, Si and B from the VP800 for 200 keV energy of Ar and N ions beam.

In Fig. 3 are the direct energy loss by the ion to the various target atoms. This energy loss, plus the direct energy loss of the ion to the target electrons, sum to the energy loss of the ion into the target. The distribution displays maxima at about 70 nm for Ar ions and about 200 nm for N beam. The efficiency of the energy absorption ranges from 3.57 keV/atom-B to 103 keV/atom-Fe per single Ar ion impact. Relatively smaller values are obtained for N ions: 1.47 keV/atom-B to 38.6 keV/atom-Fe. These two distributions show the channels of local heating.

The Fig. 4 contains the energy given up to the target electrons. The data relating to “Ions” is the direct energy transferred from the ion to the target electrons. The data relating to the “Recoils” is energy transferred from recoiling target atoms to the target electrons. For 200 keV Ar up to 130 nm more energy for ionization of target atoms are given by incident ions, up to 60 nm it is more then 50 %. For 200 keV N ions this almost all energy for ionization of target atoms are given by incident ions for all depth.

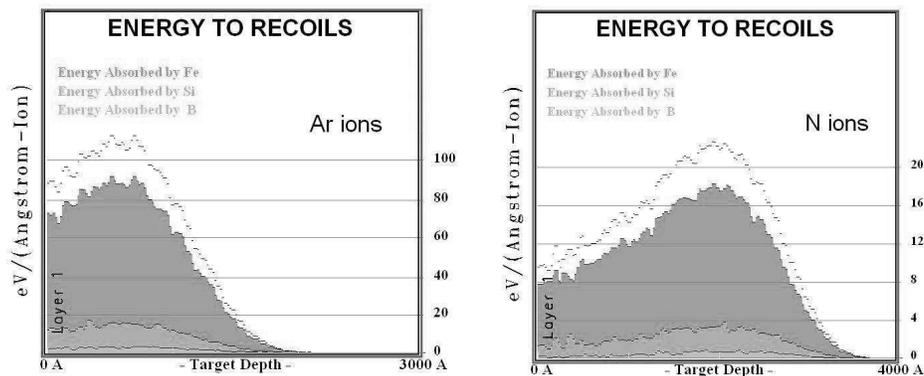


Fig. 3: The direct energy loss by the 200 keV Ar and N ions to the various target atoms.

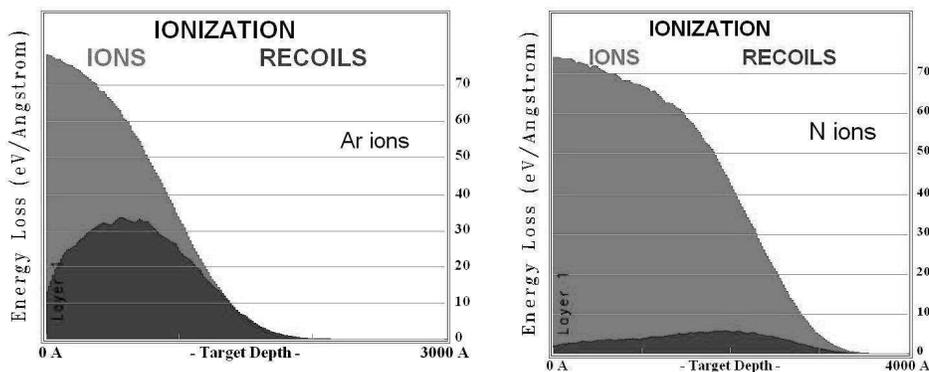


Fig. 4: The energy loss by 200 keV Ar and N ions for ionization of the target atoms.

#### 4. Results of CEMS experiments

CEMS spectra obtained for pristine foil reveal amorphous structure which is characterized by set of hyperfine parameters and structure factors analyzed previously in detail [2, 3] in dependence on temperature ranging from 70 K up to 1200 K and backwards.

With the use of scanning calorimetry, scanning thermo-magnetometry (TM), X-ray diffraction and with transmission Mössbauer spectrometry it was shown that during conventional thermal treatment the bulk thick VP800 suffers a set of structural and magnetic transformations correlated with each other [3] and is characterized by set of specific parameters, like activation energy for crystallization, the Curie temperatures or hyperfine fields and isomer shifts, and other parameters [3].

The surfaces irradiated at the dose of  $10^{10}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup> are statistically within 1% covered with 100 nm<sup>2</sup>-size spots, where ions hit the surface, whereas the spots overlapping begins at  $10^{12}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup> causing massive structural and magnetic destruction. This latter implanted dose, distributed over 100 nm penetration depth, results in the average Ar concentration of 1 ppm, which can influence phase transformations. During stopping within  $10^{-13}$  s the whole 200 keV energy of each Ar ion is transferred to electrons contained in  $8 \cdot 10^3$  nm<sup>3</sup> and subsequently shared among  $5 \cdot 10^5$  atoms. It results in increase of lattice temperature to  $3 \cdot 10^3$  K, which in turn induces magnetic and structural phase transitions of the subsurface region. The penetration depth of 100 nm for 200 keV Ar ion is comparable to the mean range of conversion electrons, which allows for CEMS analysis of the whole irradiation region.

CEMS spectra from foils irradiated at doses from  $10^{10}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup> to  $10^{12}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup>, reveal tiny effect which can be unambiguously correlated with impact of ion beam.

For untreated foil the CEMS spectra reveal a broadened Zeeman sextet ascribed to the primary amorphous phase and 5% of Fe<sub>3</sub>Si nano-crystals Fig. 5. For foil irradiated at  $3 \cdot 10^{10}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup> and  $3 \cdot 10^{11}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup>, with the remaining of amorphous phase the Fe<sub>3</sub>Si phase have bigger contribution, relative to dose Fig. 6. This effect can be correlated to grown of Fe<sub>3</sub>Si crystals in amorphous matrix or creation of new Fe<sub>3</sub>Si crystals in the neighborhoods of ion trace, but this should be investigated by XRF in the future. The dependence on irradiation dose suggests that the sextets are related to crystalline parts of the alloy produced under impact of Ar ions. Based on hyperfine parameters the multiplets were identified to come from Fe<sub>3</sub>Si nano-crystals.

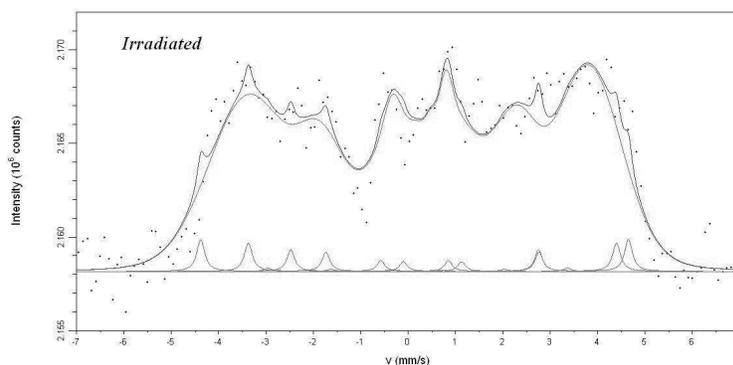


Fig. 5: CEMS from Fe<sub>73</sub>Si<sub>16</sub>B<sub>7</sub>Cu<sub>1</sub>Nb<sub>3</sub> (amorphous phase with sextets from Fe<sub>3</sub>Si) irradiated with 200 keV Ar ions, analysed with RECOIL [9].

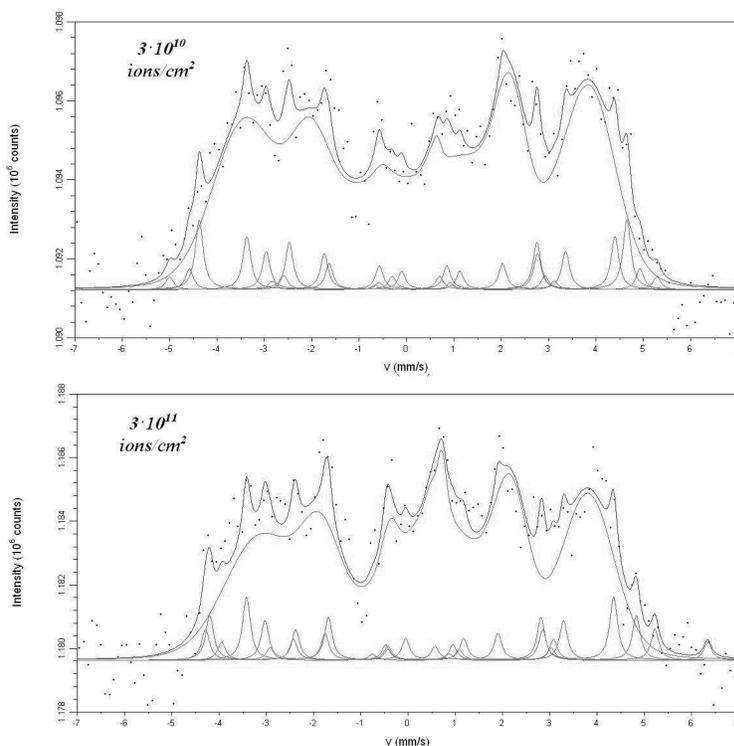


Fig. 6: CEMS from  $\text{Fe}_{73}\text{Si}_{16}\text{B}_7\text{Cu}_1\text{Nb}_3$  radiated at  $3 \cdot 10^{10} \text{ Ar/cm}^2$  and  $3 \cdot 10^{11} \text{ Ar/cm}^2$  (amorphous phase with sextets from  $\text{Fe}_3\text{Si}$ ), analysed with RECOIL.

The amorphous phase (and amorphous remainder) is characterized mainly by distribution of the hyperfine magnetic field which reveals weak (10 T) and strong (22 T) field components related to two basically distinct magnetic neighbourhood of Fe nuclei. Table 1 shows the calculated from CEMS spectra percentage values amorphous and crystalline phases in the sample before and after the irradiation of argon ions beam.

Tab. 1: Percentage values amorphous and crystalline phases in the sample VP800.

Sample	Amorphous phase	Crystalline phase ( $\text{Fe}_3\text{Si}$ )
<i>Irradiated</i>	95 %	5 %
$3 \cdot 10^{10} \text{ ions/cm}^2$	85 %	15 %
$3 \cdot 10^{11} \text{ ions/cm}^2$	82.5 %	17.5 %

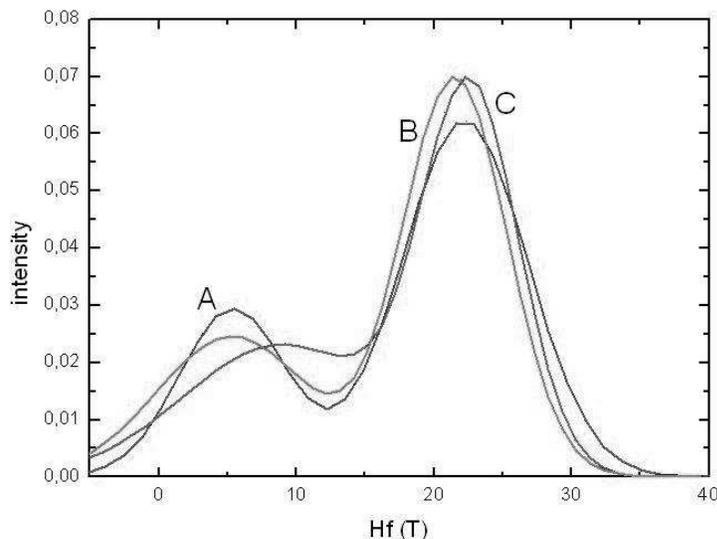


Fig. 7: Distribution of the hyperfine field of amorphous phase and amorphous remainder in VP800 irradiated (A) and irradiated (B) –  $3 \cdot 10^{10}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup> and (C)  $3 \cdot 10^{11}$  Ar/cm<sup>2</sup>, analysed with RECOIL.

It can be seen that the actual structural and magnetic composition of the surface is a result of at least two concurrent processes: creation of structures caused by heating-cooling pulses due to energy lost by the ion and disintegration of the structures due to kinematic amorphisation by HI impact.

## 5. Conclusions

It was demonstrated that impact of a relatively slow and relatively heavy ion can cause structural and also magnetic transformations of the amorphous alloys surface, the effect which up to now, in metals and isolators [5, 6], has been reserved only for slow HCI and fast HI and restricted by energy thresholds.

## References

- [1] G. Herzer, IEEE Transactions Magn. **26** (1990), 1397
- [2] R. Brzozowski, M. Wasiak, P. Uznanski, P. Sovak, and M. Moneta, J. Alloys and Compounds **470** (2009), 5.
- [3] R. Brzozowski and M. Moneta, Nucl., Instr. Meth. Phys. Res. B **297** (2012), 208.
- [4] A. Dunlop, G. Jaskierowicz, G. Rizza, and M. Kopcewicz, Phys. Rev. Lett. **90** (2003), 01550.
- [5] M. Toulemonde, C. Dufour, and E. Paumier, Phys. Rev. B **46** (1992), 14362.

- [6] A. S. El-Said, R. Heller, W. Meissl, R. Ritter, S. Facsko, C. Lemell, B. Solleder, I. C. Gebeshuber, G. Betz, M. Toulemonde, W. Moller, J. Burgdorfer, and F. Aumayr, Phys. Rev. Lett. **100** (2008), 237601.
- [7] M. Antoszevska, R. Brzozowski, J. Balcerski, K. Dolecki, E. Fratzczak, B. Pawłowski, and M. Moneta, Nucl. Instr. Meth. Phys. Res. B **310** (2013), 27.
- [8] J. F. Ziegler, J. P. Biersack, and M. D. Ziegler, The Stopping and Range of Ions in Solids, (2008), <http://www.SRIM.org>
- [9] K. Lagarec and D. G. Rancourt, [www.physics.uottawa.ca/recoil/](http://www.physics.uottawa.ca/recoil/)

University of Łódź  
Faculty of Physics and Applied Informatics  
Pomorska 149/153, PL-90-236 Łódź  
Poland  
e-mail: rbrzozowski@wfis.uni.lodz.pl

Presented by Marek Moneta at the Session of the Mathematical-Physical Commission of the Łódź Society of Sciences and Arts on December 16, 2013

#### **ANALIZA METODĄ CEMS PRZEMIAN FAZOWYCH WYWOŁANYCH BOMBARDOWANIEM NISKOENERGETYCZNYMI CIĘŻKIMI JONAMI POWIERZCHNI VP800**

##### **S t r e s z c z e n i e**

Przejścia fazowe na powierzchni materiałów amorficznych związane są z przekroczeniem energii progowej, ok. 10 keV dla energii potencjalnej przekazywanej przez wysokonaładowany jon lub ok. 5 keV/nm strat energii kinetycznej dla przyspieszonych ciężkich jonów. W pracy użyty został stop amorficzny  $\text{Fe}_{73}\text{Si}_{16}\text{B}_7\text{Cu}_1\text{Nb}_3$  (VP800) w postaci cienkiej folii ( $20\ \mu\text{m}$ ), który następnie naświetlono jonami Ar o energii 200 keV dla dwóch dawek:  $10^{10}$  jonów/ $\text{cm}^2$  i  $10^{11}$  jonów/ $\text{cm}^2$ . Następnie przeprowadzono pomiary za pomocą spektrometru mössbauerowskiego elektronów konwersji wewnętrznej CEMS, które ujawniły powstałe w wyniku bombardowania powierzchni VP800 jonami Ar krystalitów  $\text{Fe}_3\text{Si}$  w przeciwieństwie do amorfizacji powodowanej przez bombardowanie jonami o wyższych energiach.

## Rapporteurs – Referees

Richard A. Carhart (Chicago)	Yaroslav G. Prytula (Kyiv)
Fray de Landa Castillo Alvarado (México, D.F.)	Henryk Puzkarski (Poznań)
Stancho Dimiev (Sofia)	Jakub Rembieniński (Łódź)
Pierre Dolbeault (Paris)	Carlos Rentería Marcos (México, D.F.)
Paweł Domański (Poznań)	Lino F. Reséndis Ocampo (México, D.F.)
Mohamed Saladin El Nashie (London)	Stanisław Romanowski (Łódź)
Jerzy Grzybowski (Poznań)	Monica Roşiu (Craiova)
Ryszard Jajte (Łódź)	Jerzy Rutkowski (Łódź)
Zbigniew Jakubowski (Łódź)	Ken-Ichi Sakan (Osaka)
Tomasz Kapitaniak (Łódź)	Hideo Shimada (Sapporo)
Grzegorz Karwasz (Toruń)	Józef Siciak (Kraków)
Leopold Koczan (Lublin)	Józef Szudy (Toruń)
Dominique Lambert (Namur)	Luis Manuel Tovar Sánchez (México, D.F.)
Andrzej Łuczak (Łódź)	Francesco Succi (Roma)
Cecylia Malinowska-Adamska (Łódź)	Massimo Vaccaro (Salerno)
Stefano Marchiafava (Roma)	Anna Urbaniak-Kucharczyk (Łódź)
Andrzej Michalski (Lublin)	Włodzimierz Waliszewski (Łódź)
Leon Mikołajczyk (Łódź)	Grzegorz Wiatrowski (Łódź)
Yuval Ne'eman (Haifa)	Władysław Wilczyński (Łódź)
Adam Paszkiewicz (Łódź)	Hassan Zahouani (Font Romeu)
Krzysztof Podlaski (Łódź)	Lawrence Zalcman (Ramat-Gan)
	Natalia Zoriï (Kyiv)

CONTENU DU VOLUME LXIV, no. 1

1. <b>P. Liczberski</b> , Doamins with conically accessible boundary in $\mathbb{R}^n$ ( $\mathbb{C}^n$ ) .....	ca. 10 pp.
2. <b>O. Chojnacka</b> and <b>A. Lecko</b> , Differential subordination of harmonic mean .....	ca. 16 pp.
3. <b>K. Jezuita</b> , Division algebras and geometric algebras versus Minkowski space .....	ca. 10 pp.
4. <b>A. Partyka</b> , Teichmüller distance in the class of quasiregular harmonic mappings .....	ca. 12 pp.
5. <b>E. Fraszka-Sobczyk</b> , On some generalization of the Cox-Ross-Rubinstein model and its asymptotics of Black-Scholes type ...	ca. 14 pp.
6. <b>L. Wojtczak</b> and <b>Š. Zajac</b> , On the Valenta model and its actuality III .....	ca. 10 pp.
7. <b>P. Kuźma</b> , Dynamics of three Toda oscillators with nonlinear unidirectional coupling .....	ca. 11 pp.
8. <b>S. Bednarek</b> and <b>P. Tyran</b> , Systematic research on factors determining the giant magnetoresistance in magnetorheological suspensions .....	ca. 16 pp.
9. <b>A. Niemczynowicz</b> , Model of coupled harmonic oscillator in a Zwanzing-type chain. Remarks on Rowlands approach .....	ca. 8 pp.
10. <b>K. Pomorski</b> and <b>P. Prokopow</b> , Nearly time-independent Ginzburg-Landau equations for various superconducting structures and the transport mechanism .....	ca. 16 pp.